



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

E Libris

Arturi S. Napier.

ENGLISH LIBRARY

Temporary Address:
 Examination Schools,
 High Street, Oxford.

This book should be returned on or before the latest date below:

6 - MAY 1961

16 FEB 2005

20 NOV 1961

11 NOV 1972

23 NOV 1973

~~14 MAY 1977~~~~20 JUN 1985~~

17 OCT 1991

22 OCT 1992

*Readers are asked to protect Library books from rain etc.
 Any volumes which are lost, defaced with notes, or other-
 wise damaged, may have to be replaced by the Reader
 responsible.*



3000061950



Chaucer's 'Boece'

ENGLISHED FROM

"ANICII MANLII SEVERINI BOETII

PHILOSOPHIÆ CONSOLATIONIS

LIBRI QUINQUE."

EDITED FROM

MS. II. 3. 21, IN THE UNIVERSITY LIBRARY,
CAMBRIDGE,

BY

F. J. FURNIVALL,

M.A., TRIN. HALL, CAMBRIDGE; HON. DR. PHIL., BERLIN.

LONDON:

PUBLISHED FOR THE CHAUCER SOCIETY

BY N. TRÜBNER & CO., 57 & 59, LUDGATE HILL.

MDCCCLXXXVI.

To the Memory of
HENRY BRADSHAW,
IN HIS DAY
THE BEST CHAUCER SCHOLAR IN ENGLAND.

First Series,
LXXV.

R. CLAY AND SONS, CHAUCER PRESS, BUNGAY.

CONTENTS.

							PAGE
FOREWORDS	...	...	...	...	...	...	iii
CHAUCER'S BOECE.	BOOK I.		PAGE				
1st Metre	...	...	1	1st Prose	...	...	2
2nd „	...	...	3	2nd „	...	...	4
3rd „	...	...	5	3rd „	...	...	5
4th „	...	...	7	4th „	...	...	7
5th „	...	...	13	5th „	...	...	15
6th „	...	...	16	6th „	...	...	17
7th „	...	...	19				
BOOK II.							
1st Metre	...	...	22	1st Prose	...	...	19
2nd „	...	...	24	2nd „	...	...	22
3rd „	...	...	26	3rd „	...	...	24
4th „	...	...	30	4th „	...	...	27
5th „	...	...	35	5th „	...	...	31
CHAUCER'S 'Former Age'			36				
CHAUCER'S 'Fortune'			38				
6th Metre	...	...	43	6th Prose	...	...	40
7th „	...	...	47	7th „	...	...	43
8th „	...	...	48	8th „	...	...	47
BOOK III.							
1st Metre	...	...	50	1st Prose	...	...	49
2nd „	...	...	53	2nd „	...	...	51
3rd „	...	...	56	3rd „	...	...	54
4th „	...	...	58	4th „	...	...	56

Book III (*continued*).

	PAGE		PAGE
5th Metre	60	5th Prose	58
6th „	61	6th „	60
7th „	62	7th „	62
8th „	64	8th „	62
9th „	68	9th „	64
10th „	74	10th „	69
11th „	79	11th „	74
12th „	83	12th „	80

Book IV.

1st Metre	86	1st Prose	85
2nd „	92	2nd „	87
3rd „	95	3rd „	92
4th „	101	4th „	96
5th „	103	5th „	102
6th „	111	6th „	104
7th „	114	7th „	112

Book V.

1st Metre	117	1st Prose	115
2nd „	119	2nd „	118
3rd „	123	3rd „	119
4th „	129	4th „	125
5th „	132	5th „	130
		6th and last Prose ...	133

Index and Glossary by Mr W. M. Wood	141
--	-----

FOREWORDS.

As this li. 3. 21 is the best MS. of Chaucer's *Boece*, I have not thought it worth while to make a Parallel-Text of it with inferior MSS, but have just printed it by itself,¹ and sent out with it Dr Richard Morris's edition of the Addit. MS. 10,360, as issued by the Early English Text Society in 1868. These will be enough material for an Editor, so far as the English text is concerned. The other requisite is the Latin text; but as that can be bought for 2s. or so, in Peiper's edition of the *De Consolatione* and Minor Works in Teubner's Library—and doubtless elsewhere—the Chaucer Society need not issue a fresh edition of it.

There is plenty of work to be done in the way of comparing Chaucer's English and Boethius's Latin. Some of the points Dr Morris notist in his Introduction. I will only now pass on to the future Editor of Chaucer's text the notion of our lamented friend HENRY BRADSHAW, that Chaucer's explanations or paraphrasings² of the Latin text, his *Glosae* on it, should be distinguisht by a different type from his englishings of that text. The recollection of this came back to me only yesterday; and I take at haphazard, as a sample of the plan, the 11th Metre of the 3rd Book. Let the reader first turn to p. 79 of the text, and read it right through. He can't tell what is Boethius and what is Chaucer. He gets a hint from the first *Glosa*, but is not told where that stops, or where the second begins or stops. Let him then read the same page as arranged overleaf,³ and all is clear :—

¹ Henry Bradshaw and Dr Richard Morris both agreed in this.

² I call em Chaucer's, tho believing that they are englishings of some Latin commentator's. How Metre V of Book II, *Felix nimium prior aetas*, made Chaucer break into the beautiful *Former Age*, p. 36, is well known. The prose and verse renderings should be compared. In this MS. Chaucer's Balade of 'Fortune' follows on p. 38-40.

³ I don't of course pledge Henry Bradshaw's memory to the details of my arrangement. Had he livd, he'd have surely betterd em.

Who so that sekith soth by a depe thoght	Quisquis profunda mente uestigat uerum	1
And coueyteth nat to ben de- seyuyd by no mys weyes	Cupitque nullis ille deuus falli,	
lat hym rollen <i>and</i> trenden <i>with</i> - Inne hym-self / the Lyht of his inward syhte/	In se reuoluat intimi lucem uisus	
And lat hym gadere ayein enclyn- ynge in to a compas the longe moeuynges of hys thowhtes /	Longosque in orbem cogat inflec- tens motus	4
And lat hym techen his corage that he hath enclosed <i>and</i> hyd /	Animusque doceat quidquid extra molitur	5
in his tresors / al pat he compaseth or sekith fro <i>with</i> owte/	Suis retrusum possidere thesauris.	
And thanne thilke thinge that the blake cloude of error whilom hadde y-couered	Dudum quod atra texit erroris nubes,	
shal lyhten more clerly thanne phebus hym selfe ne shyneth/ /Glosa/ /Who so wole seken the dep grounde / of soth in his thowht / <i>and</i> wol nat be deceyuyd by false proposiciouns / that goon amys fro the trouthe // lat hym wel examine / <i>and</i> rolle <i>with</i> -inne hym self the nature <i>and</i> the pro- prietes of the thing/ / <i>and</i> lat hym yit eft sones examine <i>and</i> rollen his thowhtes by good deliberacion or that he deme // <i>and</i> lat hym techen his sowle that it hat by naturel pryncyplis / kyndeliche y- hyd <i>with</i> -in it selfe alle the trowthe the whiche he ymagynith to ben in thinges <i>with</i> -owte // <i>And</i> thanne alle the dyrknesse of his mysknow- ynge shal seen more euydently to syhte of his vnderstondynge thanne the sonne ne semyth to syhte <i>with</i> owte forth /	Lucebit ipso perspicacius Phoebo.	
ffor certes the body bryngynge the weyhte of foryetynge / ne hath nat chasyd owt of yowre thowhte al the clernesse of yowre knowyng /	Non omne namque mente depulit lumen	9
ffor certeynly the seed of sooth haldith <i>and</i> clyueth <i>with</i> -in yowre corage	Oblitosam corpus inuehens molem.	
	Haeret profecto semen introrsum ueri	

and it is a-waked and excited by the wynde and by the blastes of doctryne//	Quod excitatur uentilante doc- trina.	12
for wherefor elles demen ye of yowre owne wyl the ryhtes whan ye ben axed //	Nam cur rogati sponte recta cen- setis,	
but yif so were þat the norys- synges of reson ne lyuede .I. plowngyd in the depthe of yowre herte/	Ni mersus alto uiueret fomes corde?	14
this is to seyn how sholden men demen þe sooth of any thing þat weere axed / yif ther neere a Roote of sothfastnesse þat weere yplowngyd and hyd in the nature pryncyplis / the whiche sothfast- nesse lyued with-in the depnesse of the thougth/		
and yif so be þat the Muse and the doctryne of plato syngyth sooth //	Quod si Platonis musa personat uerum,	15
al þat euery whyht lerneth / he ne doth no thing elles thanne but recordeth as men recordyn thinges þat ben foryetyn.	Quod quisque discit immemor recordatur.	16

The advantage of this plan is so obvious, that some of our Members may say, 'Why didn't you print us an edition thus arranged?' My answer is, 'Because I hadn't time.' My object in the Society is to provide future editors with the best material, to give them the best hints I can for preparing a new edition of Chaucer's Works, and then leave them to do it in their own way. All my work for all my Societies is—and has been for some years—in arrear, and when I was printing the *Boece* MS, I had just time to print it, and no more. I don't like to ask Messrs Clay how long the plates have been waiting for the Index and Glossary—which Mr W. M. Wood has now made, with the help of Dr Morris's Glossary, and a reference or two to me—and these short Forewords.

If hereafter I can get any leisure for more Chaucer work than completing what is already in hand, I may perchance try my hand at a new edition of the *Boece*.

3, St George's Sq., Primrose Hill, N.W.
Good Friday, April 23, 1886.



CHAUCER'S BOECE.

BOOK I.

[MS. II. 3. 21. *University Library, Cambridge, vellum, ab. 1420,*
leaf 9, back.]

¶ The fyrste Metur [*in margin*]

A Las .I. wep¹[yng am constreyned to bygyn-]nen vers of
sorwful matere/ /pat whilom in] floryssynge [studie made
delitable ditees] For lo Rendynge Muses of poetes enditen
to me thinges to ben writen / *and* dreȳ vers of wrecched- 4
nesse / weten my face *with* verray teeres/ /at the leeste no drede
ne myhte ouercomen tho Muses þat they ne weeren felawes / *and*
foleweden my wey / þat is to seyn whan I was exiled / thei þat
weeren glorie of my yowthe² / whilom weleful *and* grene / conforten 8
now the sorful wierdes³ of me olde man⁴/ /For elde is comyn vnwarly
vp on me hasted by the harmes þat .I. haue / *and* sorwe hath com
aundid his age to ben in me/ /heeres hoore arn shad ouertymeliche
vpon myn heued / *and* the slake skyn tremblyth of myn emptyd 12
body/ /thilke deth of men is weleful þat ne comith nat in yeres þat
ben swete / but comyth to wrecches often yclepyd // Allas allas *with*
how deaf an Ere / deth cruwel torneth a-wey fro wrecches *and*
nayteth to closyn wepynge eyen / whil fortune vnfeithful / fauorede 16
me *with* lyhte goodes the sorwful howre þat is to seyn the deth /
hadde almost dreynt myn heued/ /but now for fortune clowdy hath
chaungyd hyre deceyuable cheere to meward / Myn vnpietous lyf
draweth a long vnagreable dwellynges in me/ /O ye my frendes what 20
or wherto anauntede ye me to ben weleful / For he þat hath fallen
stood nat in stidefast degree /

¹ A bit of the MS. has been cut out for its pretty initial. For the words in brackets, compare Dr. Morris's ed. from Addit. MS. 10,340, E. E. T. Soc. 1868, p. 4.

² pelage [i: hypelage, a change (of cases)] *in margin*

³ gloss: i. fata.

⁴ Antithesis *in margin*.

The firste prose [*leaf 11, margin*]

W Hile þat I. stille recordede thise thinges *with* myself /
 and markede my weply compleynte *with* office of
 poyntel/ /I sawh stondinge a-bouen the heyhte of
 4 myn heued a womman of ful gret reuerence by sem-
 blaunt/ /Hyr eyen brennyng and cleer seyng ouer the comune myht
 of men / *with* a lyfly coloure / *and with* swych vygor *and* strengthe
 þat it myhte nat ben emted/ /Alle weere it so þat she was ful of so
 8 gret Age / þat men ne wolden nat trowen in no manere þat she weere
 of owre elde/ /the stature of hir was of a dowsows / Iuggement / for
 som tyme she constreynede *and* shronk hyr seluen lyk to the comune
 mesure of men/ *and* sumtyme it semede þat she towchede the
 12 heuene *with* the heyhte of hyr heued/ *and* whan she hef hyr heued
 hyere / she procede the selue heuene / so þat the syhte of men look-
 yng was in ydel/ /hyr clothes weeren maked of riht delye thredes /
and subtil craft of perdurable matere/ /the whiche clothes she
 16 hadde wouen *with* hyr owne handes / as .I. knewh wel ¹After by hyr
 self / declaryng *and* shewyng to me the beaute / The whiche clothes
 a dirkenesse of a forletyn *and* a despised Elde hadde dusked *and*
 derked / as it is wont to dyrken the smokede ymages/ /In the
 20 nethereste hem or bordure of thise clothes / men redder ywouen in
 A grekyssh / p² / þat syngnifieth the lyf actyf/ *and* abouen þat lettre
 in the heyeste bordure a grekyssh / t³/ /þat singnifieth the lyf con-
 templatyf/ *and* by-twixen thise two lettres ther weeren seyn degrees
 24 nobely ywroght in manere of laddres / by whiche degrees men
 myhten clymbyn fro the nethereste lettre to the vppereste/ /natheles
 handes of some men hadden koruen þat cloth by vyolence *and* by
 strengthe / *and* eueryche man of hem hadde born a-wey swiche peeces
 28 as he myhte geten / *and* forsothe this forseide wouman bar smale
 bookes / in hyr ryht hand/ *and* in hyr left hand she baar a ceptre/
and whan she say thise poetical Muses a-prochen a-bowte my bed /
and endityng wordes to my wepynges/ /she was a lytel amoued *and*
 32 glowede *with* cruwel eyen/ /who quod she hath suffred a-prochen to
 this sike man / the comune strompetes of swich a place þat men
 clepyn the theatre/ /The whiche nat oonly ne asswagen nat hise

¹ leaf 11, back.

² practik *in margin*.

³ theorik *in margin*.

sorwes with none remedies / but they wolden feeden *and* norryssyn
hym with swete venym // fforsothe thise ben tho / *pat* with thornes
and prykynges of talentus or affeccyons / whiche *pat* ne ben nothing
fructefynge / nor profytable / destroyen the corn plentyuos of fruites 4
of resone // For they holden hertes of men in vsage / but they
delyuere nat foolkes fro maledye // but yif ye muses hadden
withdrawen fro me with yowre flateryes / any vnkunynge *and*
vnprofitable man as men ben wont to fynde comunly amonges the 8
poepel / *I* wolde wene suffre the lasse greuously // For whi in swiche
an vnprofitable man myn ententes ne weeren nothing endamaged/
/but ye withdrawn me this man *pat* hath be norrysshed in the
studies or schooles of Eliaticis *and* of Achademicis in grece // but 12
goth now rather away ye Mermaydenes / whiche *pat* ben swete til it
be at the laste / *and* suffreth this man to be ¹Cured *and* heeled by
myne Muses *pat* is to seyn by noteful sciences // *and* thus this com-
panye of Muses Iblamyd / casten wrothly the cheere downward to 16
the Erthe shewynge by rednesse hyr shame / they passeden sorwfully
the thresshold // *and* .I. of whom the syhte plownged in teeres /
was dyrked so *pat* I ne myhte nat knowen / what *pat* womman
was of so Imperial auctorite / *I* wax al abaysshed *and* astoned / *and* 20
cast my syht down to the Erthe // *and* by-gan stille for to abyde
what she wolde don afterward / *tho* com she ner *and* sette hyr down
vp on the vttereste cornere of my bed // *and* she byholdynge my
cheere / *pat* was cast to the Erthe heuy *and* greuous of wepyng / 24
compleyde with thise wordes *pat* I shal seyen the perturbacyon of
my thowht.

The .2.^{de} Metur [margin, leaf 12, back]

A Llas how the thowt of man dreynt in ouerthrowynge dep-
nesse / dulleth *and* forletith his propre cleernesse / 28
Myntyng to goon in to foreyne dyrknesses as ofte as his
anoyos bysynesse wexeth with-owte mesure / *pat* is
dryuen to *and* fro with wordely wyndes / *this* man *pat* whilom was
free / to whom the heuene was opyn *and* knowen // *and* was wont to 32
goon in heuenlyche paathes / *and* sawh the lythnesse of the Rede

¹ leaf 12.

sonne/ /and sawgh the sterres of the colde Moone // and which
sterre in heuene vseth wandrynge recourses .I.-flyt by diuerse speeres
This man ouercomere hadde comprehendyd al this by nowmbyr of
4 a-countynge in Astronomie // ¹and ouer this he was wont to seken the
causes whennes the sownynge wyndes moeuen and bysien the smothe
water of the see/ /and what spiryt torneth the stable heuene / and
whi the sterre aryseth owt of þ^e Rede Est / to fallen in the westrene
8 wawes // and what atempreth the lusty howres of the fyrst somer
seson / þat hyteth and aparailleth the Erthe with rosene flowres/
/ and who maketh the plentyuos Autompne in fulle yeres fletith
with heuy grapes // and ek this man was wont to telle the diuerse
12 cawses of nature þat weeren .I.-hydde/ /Allas now lith he emted
of lyht of his thouht/ /and his nekke is pressed with heuy cheynes
/ and berith his cheere enclyned a down / for the grete weyhte and
is constreynyd to looken on the fool erthe

The ij^de prose [*Margin, leaf 13, back*]

16 **B**Vt tyme is now *quod* she of Medicine Moore than of *com-*
pleynte / Forsothe than she entendynge to me ward with
alle the lookynge of hyr eyen seyde // Art nat thow he
quod she/ /þat whilom norryssed with my Mylk and fostered
20 with myne Metes weere escaped and comyn to corage of a parfit man/
/ Certes I yaf the swiche armures / þat yif thow thy self ne haddest
fyrst cast hem a-wey / they sholden han defended the in sikernesse /
þat may nat ben ouercomyn knowestow me nat' // whi artow stille /
24 it is for shame or for asthonyng / it weere me leuer þat it weere for
shame // but it semith me þat astonyng hath oppressed the/ /and
whan she say me nat oonly stille / but with-owten office of tunge /
and al dowmb // she leyde hyr hand softly vp on my brest / and
28 seyde/ /her nis no peril *quod* she/ /he is fallen in to a litarge /
/ which that is a comune sykenesse to hertes þat ben desseyuyd/ /he
hath a litel foryeten hym self // but certes he shal lyhtly remenbren
hym self / yif so be þat he hath knowen me or now / and þat he may
32 so doon / I wol wypen a litel his eyen þat ben derkyd by the clowde of
mortal thinges/ /Thise wordes seyde she / and with the lappe of hir

garnement Iplited in a frounce / she dryede myn eyen / þat weeren
 fulle of the wawes of my wepynges

The .3.^{de} Metur [*margin, leaf 14*]

THus whan þat nyht was descussed *and* chased a wey / dirk-
 nesses for-leften me // *and* to myne eyen repeyrede hir fyrst 4
 strengthe / *and* ryht by ensauple as the sonne is hid whan
 the sterres ben clustred / þat is to seyn whan sterres ben
 couered with clowdes / by a swifte wynde þat heyhte chorus/ *and* 8
 that the fyrmament stant dirked / by wete plowngy clowdes *and* þat 8
 the sterres nat apeeren vp on heuene // so that the nyht semeth sprad
 vp on Erthe/ /yif thanne the wynd þat hyhte boryas / Isent owt of
 the kaues of the contre of trace / betith this nyht // þat is to seyn
 chaseth it a wey // *and* descouereth the closed day/ /thanne shyneth 12
 phebus yshaken with sodeyn lyht // *and* smyteth with his beemes
 in merveyllynge Eyen

The 3.^{de} prose [*margin, leaf 15, back*]

RIht so *and* non oother wyse / the clowdes of sorwe dissolved
and don a wey // I took heuene *and* resseyuede Mynde to 16
 known the face of my fesissien/ /so þat I sette myn eyen
 on hir *and* fastned my lookynge / .I. behoolde my noryse
 philosophie ¶ in whos howses I hadde conuersed / *and* haunted fro
 my yowthe / *and* I seide thus // O thow maystresse of alle vertuus 20
 descended from the souerein sete ¶ whi artow comyn in to this
 solitarie place of myn exil/ /Artow comyn for þou art maked
 coupable with me of false blames ¶ O *quod* she my norry / sholde I
 forsaken the now / *and* sholde I nat parten with the by comune 24
 trauayle / the charge þat thow hast suffred for enuye of my name/
 /Certes it nere nat leueful ne sittinge thing to philosophie / to leten
 with-owten compaygnie the wey of hym þat is innocent ¶ sholde I
 thanne redowte my blame / *and* agrysen as thowgh ther weere by- 28
 fallen a newe thing/ /For trowestow þat filosofie be now alder-
 first assailed in perils by folk of wikkede manneres ¶ hAue I nat
 striuen / with ful gret strif in olde tyme / by fore the age of my
 plato / ayenis the foolhardinesse of folie // *and* ek the same plato 32

lyuyng / his mayster Socrates desseruede victorie of vnryhtful deth
in my presence // ¶ the Eritage of the which socrates / the Eritage
is to seyn ¶ the doctrine of the whiche socrates in his opinioun of
4 felicite / þat I clepe welefulnesse / whan þat the poeple of Epicur-
iens *and* stoycyens / *and* many oothre enforседen hem to gon
rauyssed euerych man for his part / þat is to seyn þat euerych of hem
wolde drawen to the deffence of his opinion / the wordes of socrates /
8 / they as in partye of hir preye to-drowen me cryinge *and* debatinge
ther ayeins ¶ *and* koruen *and* to-renten my clothes / þat I hadde
wouen with myn handes ¶ *and* with tho clowtes that they ¹hadden
Arraced owt of my clothes / they wenten away wenynge þat [I] hadde
12 gon with hem euerydel / In whiche Epicuriens *and* stoyciens / for
as moche as ther semede some traces or steppes of myn habite / the
folie of men weninge tho epicuriens *and* stoiciens my famuleres
peruertede² some / thorw the errour of þe wikkede or vnkunynge
16 Multitude of hem / this is to seyn þat for thei semede philosophres
thei weeren pursued to the deth *and* slayn // So yif thou hast nat
known the exilinge anaxogore / ne the enpoysynge of socrates ne
the tormentus of zeno / for they weeren straungeres / yit myhtestow
20 han known þe seneciens *and* þe canyos *and* the sorans of which
foolk / the renon nis neyther ouer old / ne vn-solempne / the whiche
men nothing elles ne browhte hem to the deth / but oonly for they
weeren enformyd of myne maneres / *and* semeden most vnlyk to the
24 studies of wikkede folk / *and* forþi þou owhtest nat to wondren /
thowh þat I in the bittre see of this lyf / be fordryuen with
tempestes blowynge a-bowte / in the whiche tempestes this is my
moost purpos / þat is to seyn to displesen to wikkede men / Of
28 whiche shrewes al be the oost³ neuer so gret / it is to despise for it
nis gouerned with no ledere of Reson / but it is rauyssed only by
fleetyng Error folly⁴ *and* lythly // *and* yif they som tyme
Makyng an oost ayeins vs / assayle vs as strengere / owre ledere
32 drawith to-gydere hise rychesses in to his towr / *and* they ben
ententyf abowte sarpuleris or sachelis vnprofitable for to taken / but
we þat ben heye a-bouen sykkyr fro alle tumolte *and* woode noyse

¹ leaf 16.

² gloss: s persequendo.

³ id est acies.

⁴ i sine consilio.

warnestored *and* enclosyd in swich a palis/ /whider as chateringe or
a-noyenge folye ne may nat atayne/ /we schorne swiche rauyneres
and henteres of fowleste thinges

¶ The ferthe Metur [margin, leaf 16, back]

W Ho so it be þat is cleer of vertu / sad *and* wel ordinat 4
of leuyng // þat hath put vndir foot the prowde
wierdes¹ *and* lookith vpriht vp on eyther fortune /
he may his cheere holde vndescounfited ¶ the Rage ne
the manesses of þe see commoeuyng or chasinge vpward heete fro 8
the botme / ne shal nat moeue þat man Ne the vnstable moun-
taygne þat hihte veseuus þat writith owthorw his brokene chymynees
smokyng fyres / ne the wey of thonderlyht þat is wont to smyten
heye towres / ne shal nat moeue þat man/ /whar to thanne // ¶ O 12
/ wrechches drede ye tyrauntus þat ben woode *and* felonos with-owte
any strengthe/ /Hope after no thing² ne drede nat *and* so shaltow
desermen³ the Ire of thilke vnmayhty tyraunt // ¶ but who so þat
quakyng dredeith / or desireth thyng þat nis nat stable of his ryht / 16
þat man þat so doth / hath cast away his sheld / *and* is remwed from
his place / *and* enlaceth hym in the cheyne with the which he may
ben drawn

¶ The verthe prose [margin, leaf 21]

Felistow quod she thise thinges / *and* entren thei awht in thi 20
corage // Artow lik an asse to the harpe / whi wepistow /
whi spillestow teeres/ /yif thou abydest after help of thi
leche / the by-houeth discouere thi wownde // tho .I. þat
hadde gaderyd strengthe in my corage / answerede / *and* seyde/ 24
/ *and* nedeth it yit quod I of rehersynge / or of amonicion) *and*
sheweth it nat .I.-nowgh by hym self the sharpnesse of fortune /
þat wexeth wood ayeins me / ne moeueith it nat the to sen the face
or the manere of this place⁴ / is this the librarge / which þat þou 28
haddest chosyn / for a ryht certeyn sete to the in myn hows / ther
as thou disputeddest ofte with me / of the sciences of thinges /
towchinge deuynyte / *and* mankynde / was thanne ⁵myn habite

¹ i. fata.

² leaf 17.

³ MS. desermien or deseruien.

⁴ glossed prison.

⁵ leaf 21, back.

swich as now / was my face or my cheere swich as now // whan I
sowhte with the secretus of nature whan þou enformedest my maneres
and the reson of alle my lyf / to the ensauple of the ordre of
4 heuene / is nat¹ this the gerdouns þat I referre to þe to whom I haue
be obeysaunt / Certes thou conformedest by the Mowht of plato
this sentence / þat is to seyn þat comune thinges or comunaltees
weeren blysfyl / yif thei þat hadden studied al fully to wysdom
8 gouerneden thilke thinges / Or elles yif it so byfille / þat the
gouernoures of comunalties studieden to geten wysdom / thow
seydest ek by the Mowth of the same plato / þat it was a necessarye
cause wise men to taken and desire the gouernaunce of comune
12 thinges / for þat the gouernementus of Citees yleft in the handes of
felonos tormentours citezenes / ne sholde nat bryngen in pestelence
and destruccio to goode fookk² / and ther-for I folwinge thilke
Autorite³ desired to putten forth in excussio and in acte of comune
16 administracio thilke thinges þat I hadde lerned of the / among my
secre restingwhiles // thow and god þat puttethe in the thowhtes
of wise ffolk / ben knowynge³ with me / þat nothing ne browhte
me to maystrye or dignete / but comune studie of alle goodnesse /
20 / and ther-of comth it þat by-twixen wikked foolkes and me han ben
greuous descordes / þat ne myhten nat ben releued by preyer⁴ // For
this liberte hath the freedom of conscience þat / the wraththe of
moore myhty foolkes / hath alwey ben despysed of me for sauacio of
24 Ryht / how ofte haue I recisted and with-stonde thilke man þat
hyhte coningaste / þat maade alwey assawtes ayeins the prospere
fortunes of poore feeble fookkes / how ofte ek haue I put of or cast
owt / hym trygwille prouost of the kynges hows / bothe of the
28 wronges þat he hadde bygunne to don and ek fully performed /
/ how ofte haue I couered and deffended by the Autorite of me put
ayeins perils // þat is to seyn put myn autorite in peril for the
wrechched poore foolkes / þat the couetyse of straungeres vnpun-
32 yssed tormenteden alwey with myseyyses⁵ and greuaunces owt of
nowmbre / neuer man ne drowh me yit fro ryht to wronge /
whan I say the fortunes and þe Richesses of poeple of þ^e prouinces

¹ glosst nonne.

² glosst .s. platonis.

³ gloss .i. est inexorable.

⁴ gloss : concij.

⁵ leaf 22.

ben harinyd or amenused owther by pryuey Raueynes or by comune
 tributus or cariages / as sory was I as they þat suffreden the harm
 / glosa/ /whan þat theodoric þe kyng of gothes in a dere yer
 hadde hise gerneres ful of corn / and comaundede þat no man ne 4
 sholde byen no corn tyl his corn weere solde / and þat at a greuos
 deere prys/ /Boece withstood þat ordinaunce and ouer-com it
 knowynge al this the kyng hym self/ /Coempcion) is to seyn
 comune achat or byinge to-gidere þat weere estabelyssed vp on the 8
 poeple by swich a manere imposicion / as who so bowhte a bossel
 corn he moste yeue the kynge the fifte part // Texte // whan it was
 in the sowre hungry tyme / ther was estabelissed or cryed greuos and
 vnplitable coempcion) þat men sayen wel it sholde gretly turmenten 12
 and endamagen al the prouince of compaygne/ /.I. took stryf ayeins
 the prouost of the pretorie for comune profit / and the kyng know-
 ynge of it / .I. ouer-com it so / þat the coempcion) ne was nat axed
 ne tok¹ effect/ /Paulyn a consoler of Rome / the Rychesesses of the 16
 which paulyn / the howndes of the palyse / þat is to seyn the
 officeres wolden han deuowred bi hope and couetise / yit drowh
 I hym owt of the lowwes of hem þat gapeden/ /and for as moche as
 the payne of the accusacion) aiuged by-for / ne sholde nat sodeynly 20
 henten ne punisse wrongfully albyn a conseylor of Rome/ /.I. putte
 me ayeins the hates and indignaciouns of the accusor Cyprian/ /is it
 nat thanne Inowgh Isene þat .I. haue purchased grete discordes
 ayeins my self // But I owhte be the moore assured ayeins alle oothre 24
 foolk¹ / þat for þe loue of Ryhtwisnesse I ne reseruyd neuer no
 thing² to my self / to hem³ward of the kynges halle / by which I
 weere the moore siker/ /but thorw tho same accusors acusinge I am
 condempned/ /Of the nowmbyr of the whiche acusors oon basilicis 28
 that whilom was chased owt of the kynges seruisse ⁴is now compellyd
 in accusinge of my name for nede of foreyne moneye / Also opyllion
 and caudencius han accused me / al be it so þat the iustice Regal
 hadde whilom demed hem bothe to gon in to exil / for hir trecheryes 32
 and fraudes with-owte nowmbyr/ /To whiche Iugement they nolden
 nat obeie but defendedyn hem by the sikernesse of holy howses /

¹ gloss : *scilicet* romayns.

² gloss .i. affinite.

³ gloss .s. officers.

⁴ leaf 22, back.

þat is to seyn fledden in to sentuare/ /and whan this aperceyuyd
to the king' he comaundede þat but they voidede the Cite of Rauenne
by certeyn day assingned / þat me sholde marke hem on the forheued
4 with an hoot yren and chasen hem owt of the towne/ /Now what
thing' semeth myhte ben lykned to this crwelte / ffor certes thilke
same day was resseyued the accusynge of my name by thilke same
accusors/ /what may ben seyð her to¹ / haþ my studie and my
8 kuznynges deseruyd thus or elles the forseide dampnacion of me /
made þat / hem ryhtful accusors or no²/ /was nat fortune asshamyd
of this/ /Certes alle hadde nat fortune ben asshamyd þat innocens
whas accused. / yit owte she han had shame of the fylthe of myne
12 accusours/ /but axestow in somme of what gylt y am accused / men
seyn þat I wolde saue þe compaygnye of the senatours/ /and desires
thow to heeren in what manere/ /I am accused þat I sholde han
destorbed the accuser to beren lettres / by whiche he sholde han
16 makyd the Senatoures gylty ayeins the kynges Real maieste/ /O
maysteresse what demestow of this / shal I for-sake this blame / þat I
ne be no shame to the³ // Certes I haue wold it þat is to seyn the
sauacion of the senat / ne I shal neuer leten to wilne it / and I
20 confesse and I am a-knowe / but the entente of the accuser to ben
destorbed shal cese // ffor shal I clepe it thanne a felonye or a synne
/ þat I haue desired the sauacion of the ordre of the senat³/ /and
certes yit hadde thilke same senat don by me thorw hir decretus and
24 hir Iugementus as thogh it weere a synne and a felonye / þat is to
seyn to wilne the sauacion of hem⁴ // but folye þat lieth alwey to
hym self may not chaunge the merite of thinges/ /ne I trowe nat by
the Iugement of socrates þat it weere ⁶Leueful to me to hide the
28 sothe / ne assente to Leesynge/ /but certes how so euer it be of
this / I put it to gessen or prisen to the Iugement of the and of
whise folk' // Of whiche thing al the ordinaunce and the sothe/ /for
as mooche as foolk' þat ben to comyn after owre dayes shellen
32 knowen it/ /I haue put it in scripture / and in remembraunce /
/ ffor thowchinge the lettres falsly maked / by whiche lettres I am
accused to han hooped the fredom of Roome/ /what aperteneth

¹ gloss : quod dicit nichil.

² gloss : quod dicit non.

³ gloss : q. d. dubito quid.

⁴ gloss .s. senat.

⁶ leaf 23.

me to speke ther-of/ /the fraude hadde ben shewid apertly / yif I hadde had liberte for to han vsed *and* ben at the confessioun of myne accusours the whiche thing in alle needes hath gret strengthe // For other freedom may men hoepen/ /Certes I wolde þat som 4 other freedom myhte ben hopyd/ /I wolde thanne han answered by the wordes of a man þat hyhte Canyus/ /ffor whan he was accused by Gayus cesar germeynes sone / þat he was knowynge *and* consentynge of a coniuracion y-maked ayeins hym¹ // this 8 canyus answerede thus / yif I hadde wist it þou haddest nat wist it/ /in which thing sorw hath nat so dulled my wit/ /þat I pleyne oonly þat shrewede folk' apareylen felonies ayeins vertu/ /but I wondre gretly how þat they may parforme thinges þat they han 12 hoped forto don/ /For whi wilne shrewednesse þat comth per-aenture of owre defeaute / but it is lyk a Monstre *and* a meruayle / / how þat in the present syhte of god / may ben acheued *and* performyd swiche thinges as euery felonos man hath conceyued in his 16 thowht ayeins innocentus // For which thing oon of thy famyleres nat vnskyllfully axed thus/ /yif god is whennes comen wykkede thinges / / *and* yif god ne is whennes comyn goode thinges / but al hadde it ben leueful / þat felonos folk' / þat now desiren the blod *and* the 20 deth of alle goode men / *and* ek of alle the senat' / han willned to gon *and* destroyen me/ /whom they han seyen alwey bataylen / *and* defenden goode men / *and* ek al the senat / yit had I nat desserued of the faderes þat is to seyn of the senatoures / þat 24 they sholden willene my destruccion/ /thow remembrest wel as I gesse / þat whan I wolde doon or seyen any thing' / ²Thow thy self alwey present rwledest me/ /at cite of Verone whan þat the kyng gredy of comune slawhtre caste hym to transpor vp al the ordre 28 of the senat / the gylt of his real maieste / of the whiche gylt þat albyn was accused / with how gret sykernesse of peril to me / deffendede I al the senat/ /thow woost wel þat I seye soth / ne I ne auauncede me neuer in preysynge of myself/ /For alwey whan 32 any wyht resseyueth presious renon in a-vauntynge hym self of his werkes / he amenuseth the secre of his consience/ /but now thou mayst wel seen / to what ende I am comyn for myne Innocence /

¹ gloss .s. gayus² leaf 23, back.

/ I resseyue payne of fals felonye for gerdoun of verray vertu / *and*
 what opyn confession of felonye / hadde euer Iuges so a-cordaunt in
 erwelte / þat is to seyn as myn accusinge hath / þat eyther erroure
 4 of mannes wit / or elles condicion of fortune þat is vncerteyn to alle
 mortal folk ne submittede some of hem / þat is to seyn þat it ne
 enelinede som Iuge to han pite or *compassion* / For al thogh I
 hadde ben accused þat I wolde brenne holy howses *and* strangle
 8 preestes with wykkede swerde or þat I hadde greythed deth to alle
 goode Men // Al gates the sentence sholde han punyssed me present
 confessed or *committ* / but now I am remwed fro the Cite of
 Roome almost fyue hundred thowsand paas / I am *with-owte*
 12 defence dampned to *proscricieon* *and* to the deth / for the studie
and bowntes þat I haue doon to the senat / but O¹ wel ben they
 worthi of merite as who seyht nay / ther myhte neuer yit non of
 hem be *conuict* of swich a blame as myne is / of whiche *trespas*
 16 myne accusors sayen ful wel the dignete / the whiche dignete for
 they wolden dirken it with medlynge of som felonye / they baren
 me an hand *and* lyeden / þat I hadde polut *and* defowled my
 conscience with *sacrilege* ² / for coueytise of dignete / *and* certes thow
 20 thi self þat art plaunted in me chasedest owt of the sege of my
 corage / alle coueytise of mortal thinges / ne *sacrelege* ne hadde no
 leue to han a place in me by-forn thyne eyen / For thow
 droppedest euery day in myne Eres / *and* my thowt ³ / thilke
 24 comaundement of pictagoras / þat is to seyn Men shal *serue* to godde
and nat to goddes⁴ / ne it nat *conuenient* ne no nede to taken help
 of the fowlest spirite // I þat thow hast ordeyned *and* set in swiche
 excellence þat thow makedest me lyk to god / *and* ouer this the Ryht
 28 clene secre chaumbyr of myne hows þat is to seyn my wyf / *and* the
 compaygnye of my honest freendes / *and* my wyues fadyr / as wel
 holy as worthi to ben reuerenced thorw his owne dedes / *deffenden*
 me from alle suspesion of swich blame / but O malice for they þat
 32 accusen me taken of the philosophre feyth of so gret blame / for they
 trowen þat I haue had affinite to malefice or enchauntement / by
 cause þat I am replenysshed *and* fulfylled with thy thechinges *and*

¹ *gloss* ironice, *and in margin* O meritos.

² *gloss* sorcerie.

³ leaf 24.

⁴ *in margin*, Homo debet seruire deo et non diis.

enformyd of thy maneres/ /and thus it suffiseth nat oonly þat thy
 Reuerence ne avayle me nat/ /but yif þat thow of thy fre wille
 rather be blemished with myn offencion/ /but certes to the harmes
 þat I haue / ther bytydeth yit this ences of harm/ /that the 4
 gessinge and the Iugement of moche folk/ ne looken no thing to
 the desertus of thinges/ /but oonly to the auenture of fortune/ /and
 Iugen þat oonly swiche thinges ben purueyed of god / whiche þat
 temporel wele-fulnesse commendith/ /glose/ /as thus / þat yif a 8
 wyht haue prosperite he is a good man / and worthi to han þat
 prosperite/ /and who hath aduersite he is a wikked man and god
 hath forsake hym / and he is worthi to han þat aduersite/ /this is
 the opinion of some folk/ /and ther-of comth þat good gessinge / 12
 fyrst of alle thing forsaketh wrechches/ /certes it greueth me to
 thinke riht now the diuerse sentences þat the poeple seyth of me /
 and thus moche I seye þat the laste charge of contrarios fortune is
 this / þat whan þat any blame is leyd vp-on a caytyf / Men wenen 16
 þat he hath desserued þat he suffreth // And I þat am put away fro
 goode men and despoyled of dignetees/ /and defowled of my name
 by gessynge / haue suffred torment for my goode dedes // Certes me
 semeth þat I se the felonos couynes of wikked men habownden in 20
 Ioye and in gladnesse/ /and I se þat euery lorel shapith hym to
 fynde owt newe fraudes for to accuse goode folk/ /and I se þat
 goode men beth ouerthrowen for drede of my peril / and euery
 luxurious tormentour dar doon aH felonye vnpunnysshed/ /And ben 24
 excited þer-to by yiftes // And Innocentus ne ben nat oonly despoyled
 of sikernesse/ /but of defence And ther-fore me lyst to cryen to god
 in this wise///

¶ The fifthe metur [*margin, leaf 25, back*]

O Thow makere of the whel þat bereth þe sterres / which þat 28
 art yfastned to thy perdurable chayer / And tornest the
 heuene with a Rauessyng sweyh / And constreynest the
 sterres to suffryn thi lawe / so that the Mone som tyme
 shynynge wyt here ful hornes / Metyng with alle the beemes of the 32
 sonne hir brother / hydeth the sterres þat ben lesse / And somtyme

¹ leaf 24, back.

- wan the Moone paale with hir derke hornes aprocheth the sonne
leeseth hir lyhtes // And that the eue sterre hesperus which that in
þe fyrste tyme of the Nhyt^t 'bryngeth forth hyr colde Arysnynges /
- 4 Cometh est ayein hyr vsed cours / *and* is paale by the morwe at
rysnyng of the sonne / *and* is thanne clepyd lucyfer/ /Thow
restreynest the day by shorter dwellyng in the tyme of colde wynter /
þat maketh the leues falle // Thow diuident þ^e swyft tydes of
- 8 the nyht / wan the hoothe somer ys comyn / thi myht a-tempreth
the varyauntus sesoun of the yer / so þat zephirus the deboneyre
wynd brengeth aȝein in the first somer sesoun the leues þat þe
wynd þat hihte bōrias hath reft away in autumpne / þat is to seyn
- 12 in the laste ende of somer/ /And the sedes that the sterre that
hihte arcturus sawgh / ben waxen hye cornes / wan the sterre
Syryus eschaufed hem/ /ther nis nothinge vnbownde fram his oolde
lawe ne forleetheth þ^e werke of his propre estat / O thow gouernour
- 16 gouernynge alle thinges by certayn ende / whi refowsestow oonly to
gouerne the werkes of men by dwwe manere / whi suffres thow þat
slydyng fortune torneth so grete entrechaunginges of thynges So
that anoyos payne þat sholde dwwelly punysse felouns punysse
- 20 Innocentes *and* foolk of wykkede maneres sytten in heere chayres /
/ And anoyinge foolk treden *and* þat vnryhtfully oon þ^e nekkes of
hooly men / *and* vertu clere shynynge naturely is hid in dirke
derkenesses / *and* the ryhtful man bereth the blame / *and* the payne
- 24 of þ^e feloun/ /Ne forswerynge / ne the fraude couered *and* kembd
with a fals coloure ne anoyeth nat to shrewes / the weche shrewes
wan hem lust to vsen here strengthe / thei reioysen hem to puttyn
vndyr hem / the souereyne kynges / weche þat poeple with-howtyn
- 28 Nowmbyr dredyn/ /O tow what so euer þou be þat knytttest alle
bondes of thynges / looke on thise wrecchede Erthes / we men þat
ben nat A fowle partye / but A fayre partye of so grete werk / we ben
tormentyd in this see of fortune/ /Thow gouernour withdrawh *and*
- 32 restryne thei rauesynge floodys / *and* fastne *and* ferme thise erthes
stable / with thilke bonde by whiche thow gouerneste the heuene /
/ that is so large.

The fyfthe prose [*margin, leaf 27, back*]

WHan .I. hadde with continual sorwe sobbed or borken
owt thise thinges she with hir chere pesyble and
nothing amoeued with my compleyntes / seyde thus/
/whan .I. say the *quod* she soruful and wepynge. .I. 4
wyste anon that thow were a wrechche and exiled / but .I. wyste
neuer how ferre thine exil was / yif thi tale nadde shewyd it me/ /but
certes al be thow fer fro thy contre thow nart nat put owt of it/ /but
thow hast fayled of thi wey and gon amys and yif thow hast leuere 8
for to wene þat þow be put owt of thi contre/ /than hast thow put
owt thi self / rather than any oþer wyht hath // For no wyht ¹But
thy self ne myhte neuer han don þat to the For yif thow remembre
of what contre thow art bōrn/ /It nis nat gouernyd by emperours / 12
ne by gouernement of multitude / as weren the contres of athenes/
/but oo lord and oo kyng / and þat is god þat is lord of thi contre /
whiche that reyloysth hym of the dwellyng of hise Cytesenis / And
nat for to put hem in exil. // Of the whiche lord it ys a souerayne 16
fredom to ben gouernyd by the brydul of hym / and obeye to hys
Iustyce / hasthow foryetyn thylke ryht olde lawe of thi Cite / In
the weche cyte yt ys ordeyned and establysshed / þat what whyht
þat hath leuer fownden there-in hys sete or his hows than ellys were 20
he may nat be exiled by no ryht from that place/ /For who so þat
is contyned in with the palys and the clos of thilke Cite / ther nis
no drede þat he may desserue to ben exiled / but who so þat leteth
the wyl for to enhabyte there / he for-leteth also to deserue to ben 24
Cytesein of thilke cyte/ /So þat .I. sey þat the fate² of this place ne
moueth me nat so mochel as thine owne fate / Ne .I. axe nat rather
the walles of thi lybrarye aparayled and wrowht with yuory and
with glas / than after the sete of thy thouht // In wyche .I. put nat 28
whilom bookes / but I. put þat that makeþ boekys worthi of prys / or
presyous / þat ys to seyn the sentense of my bookes/ /And certeynly of
thy desertes bystowyd in comune good / thow hast seyde soth but
after the multitude of thi goode dedes / thow hast seyde fewe/ /And 32
of the honeste or of the falsnesse of thinges that ben aposyd ayeins

¹ leaf 28.

² gloss i. manere.

the Thow hast remenbryd thinges þat ben knowyn to alle foolk' /
and of the felonys *and* fraudes of thine Acusours / it semeth the
haue .I.-twoched it forsothe ryhtfully *and* shortly / Al myhten tho
4 same thinges betere *and* moore plenteuously ben cowth in the
mowth of the poeple þat knoweth al this // Thow hast ek blamed
gretly *and* compleynyd / of the wrongful dede of the senat' / *and*
thow hast sorwed for my blame / And thow hast wopen for the
8 damage of thi renoun þat is apayred / And thi last sorwe eschaufede
ayeins fortune *and* compleynest þat Gerdouns ne ben euenelyche
yolden to þe desertes of foolkes // And in þe latere ende of thi² woode
muse thow preyedest þat thilke pees þat gouerneth þe heuene /
12 sholde gouerne the erthe / but for þat manye trybulasyouns of
affeccyouns han assayled the / *and* sorwe *and* ire *and* wepynge to
drawen the diuersely as thow art now feeble of thowht' / myhtyere
remedies ne shullen nat yit' thowchyn the / For which we wol vsen
16 sondeþ lyhtere medycynes / So þat thilke passyuñs þat ben woxen
hard in swellynge by perturbasyouns / fflowyng in to thi thowht' /
Mowen wexen esy *and* softe to reseyuen the strengthe of a more
myhty *and* moore egre medycene by an esyere towchyng

¶ The sixte metur [margin, leaf 29]

20 **W**An þat the heuy sterre of þe cankyr eschaufeth by the
beemes of phebus / þat ys to seyn / wan þat phebus the
sonne ys in the sygne of the cankyr / wo so yeueth
thanne largely hise seedes to the feeldes þat refusen to
24 Reseyue hem³ / lat hym gon bygyled of trust þat he hadde to hys
corn / to Accornes of Okes / yif thow wolt gadery vyolettes / ne
go thow nat to the purple wode / wan the feeld chyrkyng
agryseth of coolde / by the felnesses of the wynde þat hyhte
28 Aquylon / yif thow desyrest or wolt vsen grapes ne seke thow nat
with a glotonos hond to stryne *and* presse the stalkes of the vyne
in the first somer sesoun / For bachus the god of wyne hath rather
yeuyn hise yiftes to Autumpne / the latyr ende of somer. // God
32 tokneth *and* assygneth the tymes ablinge hem to heere propres offices
/ ne he ne suffreth nat' / the stowndes whiche þat hym self hath

¹ leaf 23, back.

² gloss .s. sementis.

³ gloss .s. corn.

deuyded *and* constreyned to ben .I.-medled to gydere / And forth
he þat forleteth certeyn ordinaunce of doynge by ouerthrowynge
wey / he ne hath no glade issw or ende of hys werkes.

¶ The syxte prose [*margin, leaf 31*]

FYrst woltow suffre me to towche *and* Assaye the estat^t of thi 4
thowht^t by a fewe demaundes // So þat .I. may vndirstonde
what be the manere of thi curacion / Axe me *quod* .I. at
thi wille what thou wolt^t / *and* .I. shal answer^e / tho
seyde she thus / wheyther weenesthow *quod* she that this world be 8
gouerned by foolyssh happes & fortunows / or elles þat ther be in it
any gouernement of Resoun / Certes *quod* .I. / .I. ne trowe nat^t in
no manere þat so certeyn thinges / sholden be moeued by fortunows
fortune // But .I. woot wel þat god makere *and* mayster is gouernor 12
of his werk^t / Ne neuer nas yit day þat myhte put me ow^t of the
sothnesse of þat sentence // So is it *quod* she / for the same thinge
songe thou a lytul her byforn / *and* by-wey-ledest *and* by-weptest /
þat oonly men weren put ow^t of the cure of god / ffor of alle 16
oether thinges / thou ne dowtedest nat þat they nere gouerned by
resoun / But ow^h / .I. wondre gretly certes whi þat thou art^t syk^t /
syn þat thou art put in so holsom a sentence / but lat vs sekyn
deppere .I. coniecte that ther lacketh .I. not nere what^t / But sey 20
me this / syn þat thou ne dowtest nat^t that þis world be gouerned
by god / *with* which gouernayles takestow heede þat is gouerned //
Vnⁿethe *quod* .I. knowe .I. the sentense of thi question / so þat .I.
ne may 3yt Answeren to thi demaundes // .I. nas nat desseyued *quod* 24
she þat ther ne fayleth som what / by whiche the maledye of thi
perturbacyon is krept in to thi thowt / so as the strengthe of þe
palys chynyng is opyn / But sey me this / remenbres thou what is
the ende of thinges / *and* whider þat the entensyn of alle kynde 28
tendeth // .I. haue herd yt toold som tyme *quod* .I. / but
drerynesse hath dilled my memorye / Certes *quod* she thou woost
wel / whennes þat alle thinges ben comyn *and* procedeth / .I. woot
wel *quod* .I. *and* Answerede þat God ys bygynny[n]g of alle // And 32

¹ gloss: .i. pape, [*πapai*, an exclamation].

BOETHIUS.

² leaf 31, back.

- how may this be *quod* she / that syn thow knowest¹ the byggyninge
of thinges / *pat* thow ne knowest nat what is the ende of thinges /
/ But swiche ben the customys of pertubaciouns / And this power
4 they han *pat* þey may moeue a man owte of his place / *pat* is to, seyn
fro the stablenesse *and* perfeccyon of his knowynge // But certes
thei may nat al arrace hym ne alyene hym in al / but .I. wolde *pat*
thow woldest Answer to this / Remenbrethow *pat* þou art a man /
8 Boece whi sholde .I. nat remembre *pat* *quod* .I. / Philisophye //
Maysthow nat telle me þanne *quod* she what thinge is a man /
Axestow me nat *quod* .I. wheither *pat* .I. be A resonable mortal beest /
I. woot wel *and* .I. confesse wel *pat* .I. am it // wýstesthow neuer
12 yit *pat* thow were any other thinge *quod* she / no *quod* .I. / now
woot .I. *quod* she oother cause of thi maledye *and* *pat* ryht grete //
Thow hast left forto knowen thi self what thow art / thorw whiche
.I. haue pleyonly fwonde the cause of thi maledye / or elles the entre
16 of recoeuering of thin heele // ffor whi for thow art confwndyd
with foryeetyng of thi self / ffor-thy sorwistow *pat* thow art exilyd
of thi propre goodys / And for thow ne wost what is the ende
of thinges / ffor-thy domesthow *pat* felonos *and* wykkyd men
20 ben myhty *and* weleful / And for thow ast foryeeten by whiche
gouernement the world is gouerned // ffor-thi wenestow *pat* þise
Mutacyouns of fortune fletyn with-owte gouernor / These ben grete
causes nat oonly to Maledye / but certes grete causes to thi deth / but
24 .I. thanke the ¹ Auctor *and* the makere of heele *pat* nature hath
nat alle for-letyn the / I haue grete norýssynges of thin heele //
And *pat* ys the sothe sentense of gouernaunce of the worlde / *pat*
thow byleeuest *pat* the gouernynge of it nis nat subiect ne vndyr-
28 putte to þe folie of thise happes Auentros / but the resoun of God /
and ther-for dowte the nothings / for of / this lytul sparke / thin hete
of lyf shal shyne / But for as meche as it is nat tyme yit of fastere
remedies / And the nature of thowhtes desseyued is this // that as ofte
32 as they casten Away sothe opyniouns / thei clothen hem in false
opyniouns / of which false opyniouns the dirkenesse of perturba wexit
vp / *pat* confwndeth the verray insyhte / And *pat* dirkenesse shal

.I. assaye som-what / to maken thinne and wayk by lyhte *and*
Meenelyche remedies / So þat after that þat the dirkenesse of
desseyuyng desiringes is don a-vey / thow mowe knowe the
shynyng of verray lyht 4

¶ The seuende Metyr [*margin, leaf 32, back*]

THe sterres couered *with* blake clowdes ne mowen yeten a
doun no lyht / yif the trowble wynde þat hyht Auster /
turnyng *and* waluyng the see medleth the hete þat is to
seyn the boylyng up fro the botme / the wawes þat whilom 8
weeren cleere as glas / And lyk to þe fayre cleere dayes *and* brihte
withstand anon the syhtes of men / by the fylthe *and* ordure þat is
resoluyd / And the fletyng strem þat Royleth down diuersly / ffo
hy mountaynes is arested *and* resisted ofte tyme by the encoun- 12
tryng of A stoon / þat is departyd *and* fallyn fram som Roche / And
for-thi yif thow wolt lookyn / And deemen soth / *with* cleer lyht /
And holden the wey *with* a ryht paath / weyue thow Ioye // dryf fro
the drede / fleme thow hoope / ne lat no sorwe aproche / that is to 16
seyn / lat non of thise iiij passyouns ouercomen the or blende the /
for clowdy *and* dirke is thilke thowt *and* bownde *with* brydles /
were as thise things reynen /

Explicit liber primus
Incipit secundus liber.

[BOOK II.]

¶ The fyrst prose [*margin, leaf 34, back*]

Aftyr this she stynte a lytul / And after þat .I. hadde 20
gadered by atempre stillenesse myn atencioun // she seyde
thus / as who so myht seyn thus / after thise thinges
she stynte a lytul / And whan she aperseyuyd by
atempre styllesse / þat .I. was ententyf to herkene here / she 24
bygan to speke in this whise // yif .I. *quod* she haue vndyrstondyn
and knowen owtrely the causes *and* the habyt of thi maledye / thow

languyssest *and* art defeted for desire *and* talent of thi rather fortune /
 she þat ilke fortune oonly þat is changed as thow feynest to þe
 ward / hath peruertyd the clernesse *and* the estat of thi corage/ /.I.
 4 vndirstonde the feele fold colours *and* deceytes of thilke meruayles
 Monstre fortune / And how she vseth ful flatteryng famylaryte *with*
 hem that she enforseth to by-gyle / So longe tyl þat she confounde
with onsufferabele sorwe hem / that she hath left in dyspeyre vnpur-
 8 ueyed/ /And yif thow remenbrest wel the kynde / the maneres And
 the desert of thilke fortune / thow shalt wel knowe / þat as in hir
 thow neuere ne haddest / ne hast. yloost any fayr thinge // but as .I.
 trowe .I. shal nat gretly travaylen to do the remembre on thise thinges /
 12 for thow weere wont to hurtelyn *and* despysen hir *with* manly
 wordes / wan she blawndyssynge *and* present / And purswedest hir
with sentences / þat weren drawn owte of myn entre / þat is to sayn /
 of myn enformasyoun / but no sodeyn mutacyon / ne bytydeth nat
 16 *with*-owte a manere chaungynge of corages/ /And so is it byfallyn þat
 thow art a lytel departyd fro the pes of thi thought // but now
 is tyme þat thow drynke *and* atast some softe *and* delitable thinges /
 so þat wan þey ben entred *with*-in the / it mowe maken wey to
 20 strengere drynkes of medicines/ /¹ Com now forth ther-fore the
 suacyon of swetenesse Rethoryen / whiche þat goth oonly the ryht
 wey / whil she forsakyth nat myne estatutes/ /And *with* rethorice
 com forth Musyce A damysel of oure hows / þat syngeth now lyhtere
 24 moedes or probasyons now heuyere // what eyleth the man what is
 it þat hath cast the in to mornynge *and* into wepyng/ /.I. trowe
 þat thow hast seyn som newe thinge *and* vnkowth // thow weenest
 þat fortune be chaungyd ayein the / but thow weenes wrong yif
 28 thow that weene/ /Alwey tho ben hir maneres / she hath rather kept
 as to þe wrard / hir propre stabylnesse standeth in the chaunyng of
 hir self / Ryht swich was she wan she flatelyd the *and* desseyued
 the / *with* vnlefful lykynge of fals welfulnesse // thow hast now
 32 knowyn *and* ataynt the doughtous or dowble vysage of thilke blynde
 goddesse fortune / she þat yit coueryht *and* wymplith hir to oother
 foolkes / hat shewed hir euerydel to the/ /yif thow aprouest hir *and*

thinkest þat she is god / vse hir maneres / *and* pleyne the nat / And
yif thow agryssyst hyr false trecherye / despyse *and* cast a-way hir
þat pleyyth so harmfully // ffor she þat is now cause of so mochel
sorwe to the . sholde ben cause to the of pes *and* of Ioye // she hath 4
forsakyn the forsothe / the whiche þat neuer man may ben sykyr þat
she ne shal forsake hym / /Glose/ /But natheles some bookes han
the texte thus // fforsothe she hath forsakyn the / ne ther nis no
man sykyr þat she ne hath nat forsake // holdestow thanne thilke wele- 8
fulnesse presyes to the þat shal passen / And is present^t fortune dere-
worthe to the / which þat nis nat feythfulle for to dwelle / *and* wan
she goth away þat she bryngeth a wiht in sorwe / for syn she may
nat ben witholden at a mannys wille / she maketh hym a wrecche 12
wan she departyth fro hym / what oother thinge is flyttygne fortune /
but^t a manere shewynge of wrecchyndesse þat is to comyn // ne it ne
suffiseth nat oonly to lokyn on thyng þat is present^t by-forⁿ the
eyen of a man / but wysdom loeketh *and* amesureth the ende of 16
thinges / /And the same chaungynge fram oon in to A nother / þat is
to seyn from Aduersite into pros¹perite / Maketh / þat the manesses of
fortune ne ben nat^t for to dreden / ne the flatterynges of hir to ben
desired // thus at the laste yt by-houeth the / to suffren wit euene-20
wylle / in paciense / Al þat is don in *with* the floor of fortune /
þat is to seyn / in this world Syn thow hast ones put thi necke
vndyr þ^e yok^t of hir / ffor yif thow welt^t wryten a lawe of wen-
dynge *and* of dwellynge to fortune which þat thow hast chosyn 24
freely to ben thi ladye / /Artow nat wrongful in þat / *and* makest^t
fortune wroth *and* Aspere by thine in-pacience / And yit þou mayst
nat^t chaunge hyr // yif thow commyttest *and* bytakest thi sayles to
the wynde / thow shalt be shouen nat^t thedyr þat thow woldest but 28
whedyr þat þe wynde showueth the / /yif thow castest thi sedes in
to the feeldes thow sholdest han in mynde þat the yeres ben
Amonges / owther wyle plenteuos *and* oþer while barayne / thow
hast by-taken thiself to the gouernaunce of fortune / And forthi yt 32
be-houeth the to ben obeysaunt to the maneres of thi lady / En-
forcest thow the to Aresten or *with*-holden the swyftnesse *and* the

¹ leaf 35, back.

22 *Fortune recks not the Weepings of the Wretched. She clad [BOOK II.
the naked Boece with wealth, and now withdraws it. [METRE 1, PROSE 2.*

swey; of hir turnynge wheel/ /O thow fool of alle mortal fooles /
yif fortune by-gan to dwelle stable she cesede thanne to ben fortune.

¶ The fyrst metur [*margin, leaf 36*]

4 **W** An þat fortune with a prowð Ryht Hand hath torned hir
chaungynge stowndes / she farith lik the maneres of
the boylinge Eurippe/ /Glosa // Eurippe is an arm
of the see that ebbith *and* floweth / *and* som tyme
the strem is on o syde *and* som tyme on þ^e oþer/ /Texte // she crwel
8 fortune casteth adown kynges þat whilom weren / ydrad / And she
deceyuable enhanseth vp the Vmble cheere of hym þat is descounfited
// Ne she neyther heeryth ne rekkeþ of wrecchede wepynges / *and* she
is so hard þat she lyssheth *and* scorneth the wepynges of hem the
12 whiche she hath makyd wepe with hir free wille / Thus she pleyeth
and thus she proeueth hir strengthes / And sheweth a grete wondyr
to alle hir seruauntes yif þat a whiht is seyn weleful / And ouer-
throwe in an houre

¶ The secunde prose [*margin, leaf 37*]

16 **C**ertes .I. wolde pleten with the a fewe thynges vsinge the
wordys of fortune / tak hede now thy self / yif þat she axeth
1 Ryht/ /O thow man werfore makes thow me gylty by
thyne euery dayes playnynges / what wronge haue .I. don
20 the // what goodes haue .I. byrefte the þat weeren thyne/ /Stryf or
pletan wyt me by-for what Iuge þat thow wolt of the possessyoun
of Rychesses or of dignitees/ /And yif thow mayst shewyn me / þat
euere any mortal man hath reseuyd any of the thinges to ben hise
24 in propre / than wol .I. graunte frely þat alle thykke thynges weeren
thyne / whiche that thow axest / wan þat nature browht the forth
owt of thi modyr wombe / .I. resseyuyd the naked *and* nedy of alle
thinges / *and* .I. noryssede the with my Rychesses *and* was redy *and*
28 ententyf thorw my fauor to susteyne the / And þat makeþ the now
inpacient ayeins me/ /And .I. enuyrounde the with alle the Aboun-
daunce *and* shyninge of alle goodes þat ben in my ryht / now it
lyketh me to withdrawen myn hand // thow hast had grace as he þat

used of foreyne goodes / thow hast no ryht^t to pleyne the as thowgh
 thow haddyst outrely for-lorn alle thi thinges // whey pleynesthow
 thanne / .I. haue don the no wrong^t / Rychesses honours and swyche
 other thinges ben of my ryht^t / My seruau^tus knowen me for hyr 4
 lady / they comyn with me and departen wan .I. wende .I. dar wel
 affermen hardly pat yif tho thinges of whiche thow pleynest pat
 thow hast forlorn hadde ben thyne / thow ne haddyst nat lorn hem /
 / .I. shal thanne oonly ben deffendyd to vsen my Ryht^t / Certes 8
 it ys leueful to the heuene to make cleere dayes / and after pat to
 coeueryn the same dayes with dirk nyhtes // the yer hath ek leue to
 apayrelyn the visage of the erthe now with flowres and now with
 frut / and to confownden hem som tyme with reynes and with coldes/ 12
 /The see hath ek his ryht^t to ben som tyme kalm and blawndyssynge
 with smothe water and som tyme to ben horrible with wawes and
 tempestes / But the couetyse of men pat may nat ben stanchyd /
 shal it bynde me to ben stidefast / syn pat stidefastnesse is vnkowth 16
 to my maneres / swych is my strengthe and this pley .I. pleye con-
 tinuely / .I. torne the whirlynge wheel with the tornynge cercle /
 .I. am glad to chaungyn^t the lowest to the heyest / And the heyist to
 the lowest // Worth vp yif thow wolt^t so it be by this lawe / that 20
 thow ne holde nat pat^t .I. do the wronge / thogh thow dessende
 adoun wan the resoun of my pley axeth it / wistesthow nat how
 cresus the kyng^t of lydyens of whiche kyng^t Cyrus was ful sore agast /
 a lytul by-forn pat this rewlyche cresus was kawth of Cyrus and 24
 lad to the fyr to ben brent^t / but pat a rayn dessendede down fro
 heuene pat rescowede hym / And is yt owt of thi mynde / how pat
 pawlus consul of Rome / wan he hadde takyn þe kyng of Percyens /
 weep pitowsly / for the kapteuite of the self kynge // what other 28
 thinge by-waylen the cryenges of tragedyes / but oonly the dedes of
 fortune / pat with a vnwarstroke ouertorneth realmes of grete noblye/
 /Glose/ /Tragedye is to seyn / a dite of a prosperite for a tyme
 pat endith in wrecchydenesse // lernedest nat thow in greke wan thow 32
 weere yonge / pat in the entre or in the celere of Iubyter ther ben
 towched two tonnes pat on is ful of good pat oother is ful of harm /

/what ryht hasthow to pleyne / yif thow hast takyn more plente-
 uously of the goode syde *pat* is to seyn of my Rychesses *and* prosperites/
 /And what ek yif .I. ne be nat' al departyd fro the // what ek yif
 4 my mutabylyte yeueth the ryhtful cause of hope to han yit betere
 thinges/ /Natheles dysmaye the nat' in thi thowght/ /And thow *pat*
 art put' in the comune Realme of alle / ne desire nat to lyuen by thin
 oonly propre ryht

the secunde metur [*margin, leaf 38, back*]

- 8 **T**Howgh plente *pat* is Goddesse of Rychesses hielde a-down
 with ful horn / And withdraweth nat hir hand / as many
 Rychesses as the see torneth vpward sandes wan yt ys
 moeued with rauyssynge blastes/ /Or elles as many
 12 rychesses as ther shynyn bryhte sterres in heuene on the sterry nyhtes /
 yit for al *pat* mankynde nolde nat' cese to wepe wrecchede plentes/
 /And al be it so *pat* god resseyueth gladly hir preyres / *and* yeueth
 hem as fool large meche gold / And Aparayleth coueytos men with
 16 noble or cleere honours // yit semeth hem hauen .I.-getyn nothinge
 but alwey hir crewel raayne deuowrynge al that thei han getyn /
 sheweth oother gapynges / *pat* is to seyn / gapen *and* desyren yit
 after mo rychesses/. /what brydlis myhtten wyt'-holden to any cer-
 20 teyn ende the desordene couetyse of men / wan euer the rather *pat* it
 fleteth ¹In large yiftes / the more ay brenneth in Hem the thurst
 of hauynge/ /Certes he *pat* quakyng *and* dredful weneth hym
 seluen nedy / he ne leueth neuer more ryche

¶ The thrydde prose [*margin, leaf 40*]

- 24 **T**Her-for yif *pat* fortune spake with the for hir self in this
 maners / forsothe thow ne haddyst nat' / what thow myhtest
 answe're/ /And yif thow hast Any thinge / wher-with thow
 mayst' ryht' fully defendyn thy compleynt' / it by-houeth
 28 the to shewyn yt' / And .I. wol yeuyn the spase to tellyn it/ /Cer-
 teinly *quod* .I. thanne / thise bet' fayre thinges / And enoynted with
 hony swetenesse of Rethorike *and* Musyke / And oonly whil thei ben
 herd / they ben dylysyos // but to wrechis is a deppere feelynge of

¹ leaf 39.

harm / this is to seyn / þat wrecches feelyn the harmes / that they
suffren more greuously / than the remedies or the delytes of thise
wordes mowen gladyn or comforten hem / So þat wan thise thinges
stynten forto sowne in eres / the 'sorwe þat is inset' greueth the 4
thowght/ / Ryht so is it *quod* she / for thise ne ben yit none remedies
of thi maledye / but they ben A manere norysynges of thi sorwes
yit rebel ayein thi curacion // ffor wan þat tyme is / .I. shal moeue
swych thinges þat percen hem self depe/ /but' natheles þat thow 8
shalt nat wyne to leten thi self a wrecche // hasthow foryeten
the nowmbere and the manere of thi welefulnesse // I. hoolde me
style how þat the souerane men of the Cyte tokyn the in cure *and*
kepyng / wan thow weere orphelyn of fadyr *and* modyr / And 12
weere chosen in Affynite of princes of the cyte / And thow be-
gunne rather to be leef *and* deere / than for to ben A neysshebour/
/ the whiche thing is the moost *presyous* kynde of any propinquite
or alyaunce þat may ben // who is it' þat ne seyde tho þat thow 16
were ryht weleful / with so grete A nobleye of thi fadyris in lawe
and with the castete of thi wyf / And with the oportunitie *and*
noblesse of thi masculyn chyldren þat is to seyn / thi sones /
And ouer al this me lyste to passen the comune thinges / how thow 20
haddyst in thi yowthe dygnites / þat weren werned to oolde men //
but it delyteth me to comen now to the Syngler / vp-hepyng of thi
welfulnesse/ /yif any frute of mortal thinges may han any weyhte
or *pris* of welefulnesse / myhtesthow euer for-yetyn for any charge 24
of harm þat myhte befall / the remembraunce of thilke day / þat thow
saye thi two sones makyd *conseileres* / *and* .I.-lad togedere fro thin
hows vndur so gret A semble of senatoures *and* vndyr the blythenesse
of peepel / And whan thow saye hem set in the court in heere 28
chayeres of dygnitees / thow Rethoryen or pronouncere of kynges
preysynges desseruedyst glorie of wit *and* of Eloquence / wan thow
syttynge by-twyen thy two sones conseyleres in the place / þat hihte
circo / And fulfyldest the Abydyng of the multitude of peepel þat 32
was sprad a-bowten the with so large preysynge *and* laude / as men
syngen / in victories/ /tho yaue thow wordes to fortune as .I. trowe /

pat is to seyn / tho feffedest thou fortune with glosynge wordes /
 And desseyuedest hir / wan she acoyede the *and* norrysede the / as hir
 owne delyces // thou bar away of fortune a yifte / pat is to seyn /
 4 swich gerdoun pat she neuer yaf to pryue man / wil'thou therfor
 lye a Rekenynge with fortune // she hath now twynceled fyrst vp on
 the / with wyckede eye / yif thou consydere the nowmbre *and* the
 manere of thy blysse *and* of thy sorwes / thou mayst nat forsakyn
 8 pat thou art yit blyssful / ffor yif thou therfor weenest thiself
 nat weleful / for thynges pat the semeden Ioyful ben passed / *and*
 ther nis nat whi thou sholdest weene thy self A wrecche / for thinges
 pat semen now sorye passen also / Arthow now comen fyrst A sodeyn
 12 gest in to the shadwe or tabernacle of this lyf / or trowesthou pat
 any stedefastnesse be in mannes thinges / whan ofte a swyft howre
 dyssoluede the same man / pat is to seyn whan the sowle departeti
 fro the body // ffor al pat though pat zelde is ther any feith pat
 16 fortune thinges wolen dwellyn / yit natheles the laste day of A man-
 ys lif ys a manere deth to fortune And also to thilke pat hath dwelt /
and therfor what weenestow dar recke / yif thou forlete hyr in
 deyinge or elles pat she fortune forlete the in fleyng away /

¶ The iii Metur [margin, leaf 41, back]

20 **W**Han phebus the sonne bygynneth to spredyn hyr cleer-
 nesse with rosene charyettes thanne the sterre ydym-
 myd / palyt here white cheeres / by the flambes of
 the sonne pat ouercometh the sterre lyht / this is to
 24 seyn / wan the sonne is rysyn / the day sterre wexeth paale / *and*
 leseth hir lyht / for the grete bryhtnesse of the sonne / wan the
 wode wexeth rody of rosyn flowres in the fyrst somer seson thorw
 the brethe of the wynde zepherus / that wexeth warm / yif the
 28 cloudy wynde auster / blowe fellyche / than goth away the fayre-
 nesse of thornesse // ofte the see is cleer *and* kalm with-howte
 moeuyng floedes / *and* ofte the horyble wynd aquilon / moeue
 boylunge tempestes *and* ouer-welneeth the see / 3if the forme of this
 32 worlde is so zelde stable And yif yt turneth by so manye entre-

chaungynges/ /wolthow thanne trusten in the towmblynge for-
tunes of men // wolthow trowen on flettynge goodes / is it certeyn and
establyssed by lawe perdurable þat nothinge þat is engendred nys
stedefast ne estable

4

¶ The ferthe prose [margin, leaf 44]

THan seyde .I. thus / O norice of alle vertuus thow seyst ful
soth // Ne .I. ne may nat for-sake the ryht swyfte cours of
my prosperite // þat is to seyn þat prosperite ne be comen
to me wondyr swyfly and sone // but this is thinge þat 8
gretely smerteth me / whan yt remenbryth me // ffor in alle Aduersyte
of fortune the mooste vnzely kynde ¹of *contrarios* fortune is to han
ben weleful / But þat thow *quod* she abyest thus the tormentus² of thi
false opynion / þat maysthow nat ryhfully blamen ne Aretten to 12
things / as who seyh / ffor thow hast yit many habūdaunce of
things/ /Texte // ffor al be yt so þat the ydel name of auenturos
welefulnesse moeueth the now / it ys leefful þat thow rekne with
me of how manye grete things thow hast yit plente / And therfor 16
yif þat thilke thinge / þat thow haddest for moost presyous in
al thi rychesse of fortune / be kept to the yit by the grace of
god vnwemmed and vndefowled / maysthow thanne pleyne ryhtfully
vp-on the meschef of fortune / syn thow hast yit thy beste things/ 20
/Certes yit leueth in good poynt thilke presious honour of man-
kynde / Symacus thi wyues fadyr / which þat is a man maked alle
of sapyence and vertu / the wyche man thow woldest byen Redely /
with the pris of thin owne lyf // he be-wayleth the-wronges þat men 24
don to the / and nat for hym self for he leueth in sykernesse of any
sentences put ayeins hym/ /And yit lyuyth thy wyf þat is a-tempre
of wyt and passyng oother wymmen in clenness of chastete/ /And
for .I. wol closen shortly hyr bowntes / she is lik to hir fadyr / .I. 28
telle the wel þat she lyueth loth of this lyf / And keepith to the
oonly hir goost / And is al maad and ouerkomen by wepyng and
sorwe for desyr of the / in the weche thinge oonly .I. moot graunten
þat thi welefulness is amenyssed // what shal .I. seyn ek of thi two 32

¹ leaf 44, back.

² MS. torment, as *phib* for *phibis*. But ; = also z and gh.

sones conseylours of whiche as of chyl dren of hir age ther shyneth
 the lykenesse of the wyt of hir fadyr or of hir eldyr fadyr // And
 syn the soueryn cure of alle mortel folk/ is to sau en hir owen lyues/
 4 /O how weleful arthow yif thow knowe thy goodes / for yit ben
 ther thinges dwellyd to the ward / þat no man dowlth than they ne
 ben more dereworthe to the / than thin owen lyf/ /And for thy /
 drye thy teeres for yit nis nat euerych fortune al hateful to the ward /
 8 ne ouer gret tempest hath nat yit fallen vpon the // wan þat thyne
 ances cleuen faste / þat neyther wolen suffren the counfort of this
 tyme present / ne the hope of tyme comynge to passen ne to faylen
 1 And .I. preye quod .I. þat faste moten they halden / for whyles that
 12 they halden / how so euer þat thinges ben / .I. shal wel fleetyn forth
 and escapin / but thow mayste wel sen how grete Aparayles and aray
 þat me lakketh þat ben passed away fro me/ /I. haue som what
 auaunsed and forthered the quod she / yif þat thow anoye nat or for-
 16 thinke nat of al thi fortune / As who seyth .I. haue som what confortd
 the so þat thow tempest the nat thus with al thi fortune syn thow hast
 yit thi beste thinges // but .I. may nat suffren thi delites / þat pleyneest
 so wepynge and angwissos for þat ther lacketh som what to thi weleful-
 20 nesse/ /ffor what man is so sad or of so parfyt welefulnesse / þat he
 ne stryuyth and pleyneeth on som halue ayen þe qualite of his estat /
 for why / ful angwissos thing is the conlysyon of mannes goodes / for
 eyther it comth nat al to-gydere to a wyht / or ellis yt last nat perpe-
 24 tuel // ffor sum man hath grete Rychesse / but he is a-shamyd of his
 Vngentel lynage / And som ys renowned of noblesse of kynrede /
 but he is enclosed in so grete Angwysshe of nede of thinges / þat him
 weere leuere þat he weere vnknowe/ /And som man haboundith
 28 bothe in Rychesse and noblesse / but yit he bewayleth his caste lyf /
 for he ne hath no wyf / And som man is wel and zelyly ymaryed
 but he hat no chyl dren / And noriseth hise Rychesse to the eyres of
 strange foolkys / And som man is gladyd with chyl dren / but he
 32 weepeth ful sory for the trespase of his sone or of his dowgter/ /And
 for this þer ne acordyth no wyht lyhtly to the co[n]dycyon of his
 fortune // ffor alwey to euery man ther is in som what þat vn-assaied

he ne wot nat / or elles he dredith þat he hath asayed / And adde
this also / þat euery weleful man hath a ful delycat feelyng / so that
but yif alle thinges byfalle at his owne wyl / for he incapyent or is
nat vsed to han non Aduersyte / A-non he is throwen adoun / for 4
euery lytul thinge / And ful lytul thinges ben tho / þat withdrawn
the somme or the perfeccyon of blysfulnesse fro hem þat ben moost
fortunat // how many men trowesthow wolden demen hem self to ben
almost in heuene / yif they ¹myhten atayne to the leest party of the 8
remnaunt of thi fortune / this same place þat thou clepyst exil / is
contre to hem þat enhabyten heere and forthi nothing wrecched but
whan thou weenest hyt / As ho seyth thou thy self ne no whyht elles
nis a wreche / but whan he weneth hym self a wreche by repu- 12
tacyon of his corage / And ayeinward / alle fortune is blysful to a
man / by the egreablete or by the egalyte of hym þat suffreth hyt //
what man is þat / that is so weleful þat nolde changen his estat /
what he hath lost pacience // the swetnesse of mannes welefulnesse is 16
sprayngd with many beternesses / the weche welefulnesse al though
it seme swete and loyful to hem þat vseth hyt / yit may yt nat ben
with-holden þat it ne goth away wan yt woole / Thanne is yt wel
sene / how wrecched is the blysfulnesse of mortal thinges / þat 20
neyther yt dureth perpetuel with hem that euery fortune resseyuen
agreablely or egaly / ne it ne delyteth nat in al to hem þat ben
angwyssos / O ye mortal folk what seke 3e thanne blysfulnesse owt
of yowre self / whiche þat is put in yowre self / Erroure and folye 24
confowndeth yow / .I. shal shewe the shortly the poynt of souereyne
blysfulnesse / Is ther any thinge more presyous to the than thi self /
thow wolt Answer nay / Thanne yif hyt so be þat thou art myhty
ouer thi self / that is to seyn by tranquillite of thi sowle / than hast 28
thow thinge in thi power þat thou noldest neuer leesyn / ne fortune
may nat be-neme it the / And þat thou mayst knowe þat blyssefulnesse
ne may nat standen in thinges þat ben fortunous and temporel / now
vndyrstonde and gadere yt to-gidere thus // yif blysfulnesse be the 32
souereyn good of nature þat lyueth by resoun / ne thilke thinge nis
nat souereyn good þat may be taken away in any wyse / for more

¹ leaf 45, back.

worthi thinge *and* more digne is thilke thinge *pat* may nat ben take
away // than sheweth yt wel *pat* the vnstabilnesse of fortune may
nat atayne to resseyuen verray blysfulnesse / *And* yit more ouer. /
4 what man that this towmblynge welefulnesse ledith / eyther he woot
pat it is chaungeable / or elles he woot hyt nat / *And* yif he ¹wot it
nat / what blysful fortune may ther ben in the blyndnesse of ignor-
ance/ /*And* yif he wot *pat* it ys chaungeable / he moot alwey ben
8 adrad *pat* he ne lese *pat* thinge *pat* he ne dowlth nat but *pat* he may
leesyn hyt / As who seyth he mot ben alway agast list he leese *pat*
he wot wel he may leese it // for which the continual drede *pat* he
hath ne suffreth hym nat to ben weleful / Or yif he leese it / he
12 weneth to be dyspysed *and* forletyn/ /*Certes* ek *pat* is a ful lytul
good *pat* is born *with* euene herte whan yt is lost / *pat* is to seyn *pat*
men do no more fors of the lost than of the hauynge / *And* for as
meche as thow *pi* self art he to whom yt hath ben shewed *and* proued
16 by ful manye demonstracyouns as .I. wot wel / *pat* the sowles of men
ne mowe nat deyen in no wise / *And* ek syn yt is cleer and certeyn /
pat fortunous welefulnesse endith by the deth of the body / yt may
nat ben dowlth / *pat* yif *pat* deth may take a-way blysfulnesse *pat*
20 alle the kynde of mortal thinges ne dessendeth in to wrecchednesse /
by the ende of the deth/ /*And* syn we knowen wel *pat* many a man
hath sowht the frut of blysfulnesse nat oonly *with* suffrynge of deth //
but ek *with* suffrynge of peynes and tormentes/ /*How* myhte
24 thanne this present lyf maken men blysful / syn *pat* whan thilke
selue lyf is ended yt ne maketh folkes no wrecches /

¶ The ferthe metur [margin, leaf 46, back]

28 **W**Hat^r maner man stable *And* waar / *pat* wole fowndyn
hym a perdurable sete / *And* ne wole nat ben cast
down *with* the lowde blastes of the wynd eurus /
And wole despyce the see manasyng *with* floodes //
lat hym eschewen to bylde on the cop of the Mountaygne / or in the
moyste sandes / for the felle wynd auster tormenteth the cop² of the
32 montayne / *with* alle hise strengthes / *And* the larse sandes refusen
to beren the heuy wyhte/ /*And* forthi *zif* thow wolt fleen the

¹ leaf 46.

² ? *MS* may be top.

perylous auenture / þat is to seyn of the worlde / haue mynde
certeynely to fychchen thin hows of a merye site in A lowh stoon //
for al thowgh the wynde trowblynge the see / thondre with ouer-
throwynges/ /thow that art put in quiete *and* weleful by strengthe 4
of thi palyshalt leden ¹A cler age / Scornynge the woodnesses And
the Ires of the Eyr //

¶ The fyfthe prose [*margin, leaf 49, back*]

BVt for as moche as the noryssinges of my resouns dessenden
now in to the / .I. trowe it weere tyme to vsen a lytel 8
strengere medycynes/ /Now vndyrstond heere al weere yt
so þat the yiftes of fortune ne weere nat brutel ne transi-
torye / what is ther in hem þat may ben thyn in any tyme // or
elles þat yt nis fowl / yif þat it be consyderyd and lokyd perfytyl // 12
Rychessis ben they presyous by the nature of hem self / or elles by
the nature of the/ /What is most worth of rychesses is nat gold / or
myht of moneye assembled/ /Certes thilke gold and thilke moneye
shyneth *and* yeueth betere renoun to hem þat despendyn it / thanne 16
to thilke folk þat mokeren it // ffor auarice maketh alwey mokereres
to ben hated/ /And largesse maketh folk cler of renoun // ffor syn
þat swich thinge as is transferred fram o man to a nother ne may nat
dwellyn *with* no man/ /Certes thanne is thilke moneye precyous 20
whan it is translated in to oother folkes² *and* stenteth to ben had / by
vsage of large yeuynge of hym þat hath yeuyn it/ /And also yif al
the moneye that is ouer al in the worlde / weere gaderyd toward o
man / it sholde makyn alle oother men to ben ³nedy as of þat // 24
And certes a voys þat is to seyn *with-owte* amenusynge fulfylleth
to-gydere the heerynge of moche folk // but certes yowre rychesses ne
mowen nat passen in to moche folk ³*with* owte amenusynge And
whan they ben apassed / nedes they makyn hem poore þat for-gon 28
the rychesses/ /O streyte *and* nedy clepe .I. this rychesse / syn þat
many folk ne may nat han yt al / ne al may it nat comyn to o man /
with-owten pouerte of alle other folk / And the shynynge of gemmes
þat .I. clepe presyous stoones drawith it nat the eyen of folk to hem 32

¹ leaf 47.

² or folke.

³ leaf 50.

ward / þat is to seyn for the beautes // but certes yif ther weere
 beaute or bounte in the shynynge of stones / thilke clernesse is of
 the stones hem self / and nat of men/ /for which .I. wondre gretely
 4 þat men meruaylen on swyche thynges / for why / what thing is yt
 þat yif yt wanteth moeunyng and Ioyngture of sowle and body / þat
 by ryht myht semen a fayr creature to hym þat hath a sowle of
 resoun // ffor al be it so þat gemmes drawn to hem self a lytel of
 8 the last beaute of the world / thorw the entente of hir creatour /
 thorw the distinecon of hem self / yit for as mochel as they ben put
 vndyr yowre excellense / they ne han nat desseruyd by no wey þat
 ye sholden mervaylen on hem/ /And the beaute of feldes delyteth yt
 12 nat mochel vn to yow / Boece / why sholde it nat delyten vs / syn
 þat it ys a ryht fayr porsyon of þ^e ryhte fayre werke þat is to seyn
 of this world/ /And ryht so ben we gladed som tyme of the face of
 the see whan yt is cler / And also merueylen we on the heuene /
 16 and on the sterres / And on the sonne and on the Moone / phylo-
 sophie/ /Aperteneth quod she any of thilke thinges to the / why
 darsthow gloryfyen the in the shynynge of any swyche thinges //
 Arthow distingwed and embelysed by the spryngynge flowres of the
 20 fyrst somer sesoun // or swellyth thy plente in the fructes of somer/
 / whi arthow rauyssed with ydel loyes / whi enbracest thow
 straunge goedes as they weeren thyne // fortune ne shal neuer
 makyn þat swyche thynges ben thyne þat nature of thinges hath
 24 maked foreyne fro the/ /Soth is þat with-owten dowte / the frutes
 of the Erthe owen to ben to the norysynge of bestys/ /And yif þou
 wolt fulfyllen thy nede after þat yt suffiseth to nature / than is yt no
 nede þat thow seke after the superflwite ¹Of fortune/ /ffor with ful
 28 fewe thinges And with ful lytel thinges nature halt hir apayed /
 And yif þou wolt achoken the fulfyllynge of nature with super-
 flwites Certes thilke thinges þat þou wolt thresten or powren in to
 nature shollen ben vnIoyful to the or elles anoyos // wenest' thow ek
 32 þat yt be a fayre thing' to shyne with diuerse clothinge / of which
 klothinge yif the beaute be agreable to loken vp-on / .I. wol
 mervaylen on the nature of the matere of thilke klothes / or elles on

the werkman þat wrowht hem/ /But also a longe Rowte of meyne /
makyth þat a blysful man / þ^e whiche *seruantus*² / yif they ben
visyous of condiciouns it is a gret charge *and* a distrucsyon to the
hows / And a gret enemy to the lord hym self/ /And yif they ben 4
goode men / how shal straunge or foreyne goodnesse ben put in þ^e
nowmbre of thi Rychesse/ /So þat by alle thyse forseide pinges it is
cleerly .I. shewyd þat neuer oon of thilke thinges þat thow acount-
edest for thine goodes nas nat thi good / In the wyche thinges yif 8
ther be no beaute to ben desyred / why sholdesthow ben sory yif
thow leese hem / or why sholdesthow reioysen the to holden hem /
ffor yif they ben fayre of hyr owne kynde / what aperteneth that to
the / for al so wel sholden they han ben fayre by hem selue / 12
though they weeryn departed fram alle thyne rychesses // ffor why
fayre ne presyous ne weeren they nat for þat they comen amonge thy
Rychesses // but for they semeden fayre *and* presyous / ther-for thow
haddyst leuere rekne hem amonges thy Rychesses/ /But what 16
desires thow of fortune *with* so grete a noyse / *and with* so gret
a fare/ /I. trowe thow seke to dryue a-wey nede *with* habund-
aunce of thinges / but certes it torneth to yow al in the contrarye
ffor why certes it nedeth of ful manye helpynges to kepyn the 20
diuersyte of *presyos ostelementus*/ /And soth it is þat of manye
thinges / han they nede þat many thinges han/ /And ayeinward of
lytul nedeth hem þat mesuren hir fille after the nede of kynde / *and*
nat after the owtrage of coueytise / Is it thanne so / þat ye men ne 24
han no propyr goode / I-set in yow // ffor whiche ye moten sekyn
owtward yowre goodis in foreyne *and* subgyt thinges / So is thanne
the condysyn of thinges torned vp so down / þat a man þat is
a deuine ²beest by meryte of his resoun / thinketh þat hym self nis 28
neyther fayre ne noble / but yif yt be thorw possessyon of ostel-
mentus þat ne han no sowles // And certes al oother thinges ben
apayed of hir owne beautes / But ye men þat ben semblable to God/
by yowre resonable thought desyren to a-payrelen yowre excellent 32
kynde of the lowest thinges // Ne ye vndyrstondyn nat how gret a

¹ MS *seruant*; : 3 is sometimes z initial and medial (p. 34) as well as *us* and
gh final.

² leaf 51.

wrong¹ ye don to yowre creatour / for he wolde þat mankynde were
 most worthy *and* noble of any oother wordly thinges/ /And ye
 threste adown yowre dignitees by-nethe the lowest thinges/ /ffor yif
 4 þat al þ^e good of euery thinge / be more presyos than ys thilke
 thinge whos þat the good ys / syn ye demen þat tho fowlest thinges
 ben yowre goodys // thanne submitten ye *and* putten yowre seluen
 vndyr the fowleste thinges by yowre estimacion/ /And certes this
 8 tydeth nat¹ *with*-owte yowre desertes / for certes swyche is the condy-
 syon¹ of alle man kynde / þat oonly whan yt hath knowynge of it selue /
 than passeth it in noblesse alle oother thinges/ /And whan yt for-
 leteth þ^e knowynge of it self / than is it browht by-nethen alle beestys
 12 // for why al oother leuyng bestys han of kynde to knowe nat¹ hym-
 self // but whan men letyn the knowynge of hem-self yt comth hem
 of vice // but how brode shewyth the erreure And the folye of yow
 men / þat wenen þat any thinge may ben aparayld with straunge
 16 aparaylementus // but for sothe þat may nat ben doon/ /For yif a wyht
 shyneth *with* thinges þat ben put to hym / as thus / yif thilke
 thinges schynen *with* which a man is aparayled / certes thilke
 thinges ben comendyd *and* preysed *with* whyche he is aparayld //
 20 but natheles the thinge þat is coueryd *and* wrappyd vndyr þat
 dwelleth in his felthe/ /And .I. denye þat thilke thinge be good þat
 anoyeth hym þat hath it/ /Gabbe .I. of this / thow wolt seye nay //
 Certes Rychesses han a-noyed ful ofte hem that han tho Rychesses //
 24 syn þat euery wyckyd shrewe / and for hys wyckednesse the more gredy
 Aftyr oother folkes Rychesses / wer so euer it be in any place / be it
 gold or presyous stones/ /And wenyth hym only most worthi þat
 hat hem // thow thanne þat so bysy dredist¹ now the swerd *and*
 28 the spere // yif thow haddyst entred in the paath ¹of this lyf a
 voyde wayferynge man / þan woldyst thow synge by-forn the thef /
 as who seyth a pore man þat berth no Rychesse on hym / by the
 weye / may boldely synge by-forn theues / for he hath nat¹ werof to
 32 ben robbed / O precyos And ryht cler is the blysfulnesse of mortal
 rychesses / þat whan thow hast getyn yt¹ / than hast thow lorn thi
 sikernesse

¹ leaf 51, back.

¶ The fyfthe metur [*margin, leaf 52*]

Blysful was the fyrst age of men // they heldyn hem apayed
/ *with* the metes þat the trewe feeldes browhten forth //
they ne dystroyede nor desseyuyd nat hem self *with*
owtrage // they weeren wont lythly to slakyn hyr hungyr 4
at euen *with* accornes of Okes/ /they ne cowde nat medly the yifte
of bachus to the cleer hony / þat is to seyn they cowde make no
pyment nor clarree / ne they cowde nat medle the bryhte fleeces of
the contre of Seryens / *with* the venym of tyrye // this is to 8
seyn they cowde nat deyen white flees of syryen contre *with* the
blood of a manere shyллеfyssh / þat men fynden in tyrye / *with*
whiche blood men deyen purpyr/ /they slepin holsom slepys
vp on the gras/ /And dronkyn of the rennynge wateres/ /And 12
layen vndyr the shadwes of the heye pyn trees/ /Ne no gest
ne straungere ne karue yit the heye see *with* oores / or *with*
shippes // Ne they ne hadde seyn yit none newe strondes to leden
marchaundyse ¹In-to diuerse contres/ /Tho weeryn p^e crwel 16
claryouns ful hust *and* ful styлле // ne blod I-shad by egre hate ne
hadde nat deyed yit armures / for werto / or whych wodnesse of
enemys wolde fyrst moeuen arnes / whan they say crwel woundes ne
none meedes be of blod .I.-shad/ /.I. wolde þat owre tymes sholde 20
torne ayein to p^e olde maneres // but p^e angwissos loue of hauynge
brenneth in folk moore crwely than p^e fyr of mowntaigne ethna /
þat ay brenneth/ /Allas what was he þat fyrst dalf vp the gobetes
or the weyhtes of gold couered vndyr erthe / And the presios stoones 24
þat woldyn han be hydd // he dalf vp presios perils / þat is to seyn
þat he þat hem fyrst vp dalf / dalf vp a presios peril / for whi for
the preciosnesse of swych thinge hath many man be in peril

¹ leaf 52, back.

Chawcer vp on this fyfte metur of the second book¹

- A** Blysful lyf a paysyble *and* a swete [The *Former Age*]
 ledden the poeples in the former age
 They helde hem paied of the fructes *pat* pey ete
 4 whiche *pat* the feldes yaue hem by vsage
 They ne weere nat forpampred with owtrage
 Onknowyn was þ^e quyerne *and* ek the melle
 They eten mast hawes *and* swych pownage
 8 And dronken water of the colde welle
 ¶ yit nas the grownd nat wounded with þ^e plowh
 but corn vp sprong vnsowe of mannes hond
 þe which they gnodded *and* eete nat half .I.-nowh
 12 ne man yit knewe the forwes of his lond
 no man the fyr owt of the flynt yit fonde
 Vn-koruen and vn-grobbed lay the vyne
 no man yit in the mortar spices grond
 16 to clarre ne to sawse of galentyne
 ¶ no Madyr welde or wod no litestere
 ne knewh / the fles was of is former hewe
 no flesh ne wyste offence of egge or spere
 20 no coyn ne knewh man which is fals or trewe
 no ship yit karf the waves grene *and* blewe
 no Marchaunt yit ne fette owt-landissh ware
 no batails trompes for the werres folk ne knewe
 24 ne towres heye *and* walles rownde or square
 ¶ what sholde it han avayled to werreye
 ther lay no profyt ther was no rychesse
 But corsed was the tyme .I. dar' wel seye [leaf 53]
 28 *pat* men fyrst dede hir swety bysynesse
 to grobbe vp metal lurkyng in dirkenesse
and in þe Ryuerys fyrst gemmys sowhte

¹ Though this *Former Age* and the *Fortune* that follows have been printed before in our *Parallel Text*, I give 'em again here, to show how they turn-up in the *Boece*.

Allas than sprong vp al the cursydnesse
of coueityse þat fyrst owr sorwe browhte (32)

¶ thyse tyrauntus put hem gladly nat in pres
4 no places wyldnesse ne no bussches for to wynne
Ther pouerte is as seith diogenes
ther as vitayle ek is so skars *and* thinne (36)

8 but þer as bagges ben *and* fat vitaile
with al hir ost the Cyte for to a-sayle
Ther wol they gon *and* spare for no synne (40)

¶ yit was no paleis chaumbres ne non halles
12 in kaues *and* wodes softe *and* swete
Sleptin this blyssed folk with-owte walles
Or gras or leues in perfyte Ioye reste *and* quiete (44)

16 was kyd to hem but in surte they slepte
hir hertes weere al on with-owte galles
euerych of hem his feith to oother kepte (48)

¶ Vnforged was the hawberke *and* the plate
20 þe lambyssh poeple voyded of alle vyse
hadden no fantesye to debate
but eche of hem wolde oother wel cheryce (52)

24 No lord no taylage by no tyranye
vmblesse *and* pes good feith the emperice
[. no gap in MS.] (56)

¶ yit was nat Iuppiter the lykerous
28 þat fyrst was fadyr of delicacie
come in this world ne nembrot desyrous
to regne had nat maad his towres hye (60)

Allas alas now may wepe And crye
32 ffor in owre dayes nis but coueityse
dowblenesse *and* tresoun *and* enuye
poyson *and* manslawhter *and* mordre in sondry wyse (64)

Causer / Balades de vilage sanz peinture

¶ This wrecched worlde is transmutacion
as wele / or wo / now poeere *and* now honour
with-owten ordyr or wis descresyon

4 gouerned is by fortunes errour
but natheles the lakke of hyr fauowr
ne may nat don me syngen thowh .I. deye
Iay tout' perdu moun temps *et* moun labour

[leaf 53, back]

8 ffor fynaly fortune .I. the deffye

¶ yit is me left the lyht of my resoun
to knowen frend fro foo in thi merowre
So mochel hath yit thy whirlynge vp *and* down

12 I-tawht me for to knowe in an howre
but trewely no fors of thi reddowre
to hym þat ouer hym self hath the maystrye
My suffysaunce shal be my socoure

16 ffor fynaly fortune .I. thee deffye

¶ O Socrates þou stidfast chaumpyon
she neuer myht be thi tormentowr
thow neuer dreeddest hyr oppressoun

20 ne in hyr chere fownde thow no sauoure
thow knewe wel the deseyte of hyr coloure
And þat hire most worshiþe is to lye
I knew hir' ek a fals dissimuloure

24 ffor fynaly fortune .I. the deffye

Le responce de fortune a pleintif

¶ No man ys wrechchyd but hym self yt wene
and he þat hath hym self hat suffisaunce
whi seysthow thanne y am the so kene

28 þat hast thy self owt of my gouernaunce
sey thus graunt mercy of thyn haboundaunce
that thow hast lent or this why wolt þou stryue
what woost thow yit how y the wol auauce
32 *and* ek thow hast thy beste frende a lyue

¶ I haue the tawht deuisyon by-twene (33)

frend of effect *and* frende of cowntenaunce
the nedeth nat the galle of no hyene

4 þat cureth eyen derkyd for penaunce (36)

now seist thou cleer þat weere in ignoraunce
yit halt thin ancre *and* yit thou mayst aryue
ther bownte berth the keye of my substaunce

8 *and* ek þou hast thy beste frende alyue (40)

¶ how manye haue .I. refused to sustigne
syn .I. the fostred haue in thy plesaunce
wolthow thanne make a statute on þy quyene

12 þat .I. shal ben ay at thy ordynaunce (44)

thow born art in my regne of varyaunce
abowte the wheel *with* oother most thou dryue
My loore is bet than wikke is thi greuaunce

16 *and* ek þou hast thy beste frende a lyue (48)

Le Responce du pleintif coudre fortune.

¶ Thy loore y dempne / it is aduersyte [leaf 54]

My frend maysthow nat reuen blynde goddessse
þat .I. thy frendes knowe .I. thanke to the

20 Tak hem agayn / lat hem go lye on presse (52)

the negardye in kepynge hyr rychesse
pronostik is thou wolt hire towre asayle
wikke appetyt comth ay before sykenesse

24 in general this rewle may nat fayle (56)

Le responce de fortune coudre le pleintif

¶ Thou pynchest at my mutabylyte
ffor .I. the lente a drope of my rychesse
And now me lykyth to *with*-drawe me

28 whi sholdysthow my realte apresse (60)

the see may ebbe *and* flowen moore or lesse
the welkne hath myht to shyne reyne or hayle

ryht so mot .I. kythen my bruteinesse
in general this rewle may nat fayle (64)

Le pleintif

- ¶ Lo excussyon¹ of the maieste
4 þat al purueyeth of his ryhtwysnesse
that same thinge fortune clepyn ye
ye blynde beestys ful of lewednesse (68)
the heuene hath proprete of sykyrnesse
8 this world hath euer resteles trauayle
thy laste daye is ende of myn intersee
in general this rewele may nat fayle (72)

Lennoy de fortune

- ¶ Prynses .I. preye yow of yowre gentillesces
12 Lat nat this man on me thus crye *and* pleyne
And .I. shal quyte yow yowre bysynesse
at my requeste as thre of yow or tweyne (76)
þat but yow lest releue hym of hys peyne
16 preyeth hys best frend of his noblesse
That to som betere estat he may attayne

The sixte prose [*margin, leaf 56*]

- 20 **B**ut what shal .I. seye of dignites *and* of powers / the
whiche ye men þat neyther knowen verray dignite / ne
verray power / areysen hem as heye as the heuene / the
whiche dignites *and* powers yif they comen to any wykkyd
man they don as grete damages *and* destrucciouns / as doth the
flaumbe of the mountaigne ethna / whan the flawmbe walweth vp /
24 ne no deluge¹ ne doth so crwel harmes / Certes the remenbryth wel
as .I. trowe þat thikke dignite þat men clepyn the Imperiye of
consulers / the whych þat whilom was bygnnyng of fredom /
yowre eldres coueiteden to han don a-way þat dignite for the pride
28 of the consulers / And ryht for the same pride / yowre Eldres
byforn þat tyme hadden don a-wey owt of the cyte of Rome

¹ gloss: .i. diluuium.

the kynges name // þat is to seyn they nolde han no lengere no
kynge // but now yif so be / þat dignites *and* powers ben yeuen to
goode men the which / thing is ful ȝelde/ /what agreable thinges is
ther in the dignites or powers / but onely the goodnesse of foolkys / 4
þat vsen hem/ /And therfor it is thus / þat honour ne comth nat
to vertu / for cause of dignite / but ayeinward honour comth to
dignite for cause of vertu // but which is thilke yowre ¹dereworthe
power þat is so cleer *and* so requerable / O / ye erthelyche bestys 8
considere ye nat ouer which thinge þat it semeth þat ye han power/
/now yif thow saye a mous amonges oother musus þat chalengede
to hym self ward ryht *and* power ouer alle oother mysus // how gret
scorn woldisthow han of hit // glosa/ /So farith yt by men the 12
body hath power ouer the body // ffor yif thow looke wel vp on the
body of a wyht / what thinge shalthow fynde moore freele than ia
man kynde / the whiche men wel ofte ben slayn with bytynge of
smale flyes / or elles with the entrynge of crepynge wormes in to the 16
priuetes of mannes body/ /but wher shal men fynden any man þat
may excercen or haunten any ryht vp on a noþer man / but onely
on hys body or elles vp on thinges þat beȝ lowere than the body //
the which .I. clepe fortunows possessyouns/ /Maysthow euer haue 20
any comaundement ouer a fre corage²/ /Maysthow remwen fro the
estat of his propre reste / a thowht that is clyuyng to-gidere in hym
self by stidefast resoun // as whylom a tyraunt wende to confownde
a fre man of corage / *and* wende to constreyne hym by torment to 24
maken hym discoueren *and* acusen folk þat wysten of a *coniuracion*
which .I. clepe a confederacie þat was cast ayeins this tyraunt/ /but
this fre man boot of his owne tonge *and* cast it in the visage of
thilke woode tyraunt // so þat the tormentus þat this tyraunt wende 28
to han makeȝ matere of crwelte this wiseman makyd it makyd it
matere of vertu/ /but what thing is it þat a man may don to a
nother man / þat he ne may resseyuen the same thinge of oothre folkes
in hym self / or thus what may a man don to folk þat folkes ne may 32
don hym the same/ /I. haue herd told of busirides þat was wont to
slen hise gestys / þat herberweden in his hows / *and* he was sleyn

¹ leaf 56, back.² gloss: quoa. dicit. non.

hym self of ercules þat was his gest // Regulus hadde takyn in
batayle many men of affryke *and* cast hem in to feteres/ /but sone
after he moste yeue hys handes to ben bownde *with* the cheynes of
4 hem þat hadde whylom ouercomen // weenesthow thanne þat he be
myhty that hath no power to don a thinge þat oothre ne may don in
hym / þat he doth in oothre / And yit moore ouer yif it so weere
þat thise dignites or poweres hadden any propre or natural goodnesse
8 in hem self / neuer nolden they 'comyn to shrewes/ /For contraryos
thinges ne ben nat' wont' to ben ifelawshipped to-gidere/ /Nature
refuseth þat contrarious thinges ben .I.-ioigned / *and* so as .I.
am in certain þat ryht wykkyd folk han dignites ofte tyme / than
12 sheweth it wel þat dignites *and* powers ne ben nat goode of hire
owne kynde // syn þat they suffren hem self to cleuen or Ioynen
hem to shrewes/ /And certes the same thinges may moost digneliche
Iugen *and* seyn of alle the yiftes of fortune / þat moost plenteuously
16 comyn to shrewes / of þ^e which yiftes .I. trowe þat yt owhte ben
consideryd / þat no man dowlth þat he nis strong' in whom he seth
strengthe // *and* in whom þat swyftnesse is/ /soth is that he swyft' //
Also Musike maketh Musiciens / *and* phisike maketh phisiciens /
20 *and* rethoryk rethoryens // ffor whi the nature of euery thing
maketh his proprete/ /ne it nis nat entremedled / *with* the effect of
the contraryous thinges / And as of wil it chaseth owt thinges þat
to it ben contrarye // but certes Rychesse may nat' restreyne Auarice
24 vnstaunched/ /ne power ne makyth nat' a man myhty ouer hym
self / whiche þat visyous lustys holden destreyned *with* cheynes þat
ne mowen nat be vnbownden/ /And dignites þat ben yeuen to
shrewede folkes nat oonli ne makyth hem nat digne / but it sheweth
28 rather al opynly þat they ben vnworthi *and* vndigne/ /And why is
it thus / Certes for ye han Ioye to clepyn thinges *with* false names
þat beren hem alle in þ^e contrarye // the which names ben ful ofte
reproeued by the effecte of the same thinges/ /So that thise ilke
32 rychesse ne owhten nat by ryht' to ben clepyd rychesesses / ne swich
power ne owhte nat ben clepyd power / ne swich dignite ne owht nat'
ben clepyd dignite // And at the laste .I. may conclude the same

thing / of alle the yiftes of fortune / in which per nis nothinge to
ben desired / ne þat hath in hym self naturel bownte / as it is
ful wel .I.-seene / ffor neyther they ne loignen hem nat alwey to
goode men / ne makyn hem alwey goode to whom they ben .I.- 4
ioigned // verbi gratia /

¶ The sixte Metur [*margin, leaf 57, back*]

WE han wel knowen how many grete harmes *and*
destrucsyons weren don by the emperour nero // he
let brenne the Cyte of Rome *and* made slen the 8
senatoures/ /And he crwel whilom slow his brother
and he was makyd moyst *with* the blood of his modyr / þat is to
seyn he lette slen *and* slitten the body of his modyr / to sen wher he
was conseyued / *and* he lookyd on euery halue vp on hyr colde dede 12
body / ne no teere ne wette¹ his face/ /but he was so hard hertyd /
þat he myhte ben domes man or Iuge of hyr dede beaute / *and*
natheles yit gouernede this nero by ceptre alle the poeples that
phebus the sonne may sen / Comynge fram hys owtereste arysynge til 16
he hide his bemes vndyr the wawes / þat is to seyn he gouernyd alle
the poeples by sceptre inperial þat the sonne goth a-bowte from est
to west² And ek this nero gouernyd by ceptre alle the poeples þat ben
vndyr the colde sterres that hyhten vii tyryones / this to seyn he 20
gouernede alle the poeples þat ben vndyr the party of the north /
and ek nero gouernede alle þe poeples þat the vyolent wynd nothus
scorklyth / *and* bakyth the brennyng¹ sandes by hys drye hete / þat
is to seyn alle the poeples in the sowth/ /but yit ne myhte nat al 24
his hye power torne the woodnesse of this wykkyd nero / Allas it is
greuous fortune it is // as ofte as wykked swerd is ioyned to crwel
venym / þat is to seyn venimos crwelte to lordshippe

¶ The seuende prose [*margin, leaf 60*]

THanne seyde .I. thus // thow wost wel thy self þat the 28
coueytise of mortal thinges ne hadden neuer lordshipe of
me/ /but .I. haue wel desyred matere of thinges / to done /
as who seyth .I. desyre to han matere of gouernaunce ouer

¹ MS wecte.

² leaf 58.

communalitees/ /ffor vertu stille ne sholde nat elden // þat is to seyn
þat list þat or he wax old / his vertu þat lay now ful styлле / ne sholde
nat perise vn-excercised in gouernaunce of comune / ffor which men
4 myhten spekyn or wryten of his goode gouernement // philosophie //
ffor sothe *quod* she *and* that is a thing þat may drawen to gouernaunce /
swiche hertes as ben worthi *and* noble of hir nature/ /but natheles it
may nat drawen ¹or tollen swiche hertes as ben .I.-browht to the fulle
8 perfeccyoun of vertu // þat is to seyn coueytise of glorie *and* renoun
to han wel admynystryd the comune thinges or don gode desertes to
profyt of the comune/ /ffor se now *and* consydere how lytul *and* how
voyde of alle prys is thilke glorie/ /Certain thing is as thow hast
12 lerned by the demonstracyoun astronomye // þat al the enuyronynge
of the erthe abowte ne halt but the resoun of a prikke at regard of the
gretnesse of heuene/ /þat is to seyn / þat yif ther weere maked
comparisoun of the erthe to the gretnesse of heuene / men woldyn
16 Iugen in al / þat the erthe ne helde no space/ /of the whyche litel /
region) of this worlde / the ferthe partye ys enhabited *with* lyuynge
bestys þat we knowen / as thow hast thyself ylerned by tholome þat
proueth it/ /And yif thow haddest *with*-drawen / *and* abated in thy
20 thowht fro thilke ferthe partye as moche space as the see *and* the
mareys contenen and ouer-goon / *and* as moche spaces as the region) of
drowhte ouerstrechcheth / þat is to seyn sandes *and* desertes // vel /
vnnethe sholde ther dwellyn a ryht streyt place to the habyta-
24 syoun of men / And ye thanne þat ben enuyroned *and* closed with-
in the leste prykke / of thilke prykke / thinken ye to manyfesten
yowre renoun *and* don yowre name to ben born forth // but yowre
glorie þat is so narwh *and* so streyte Ithrongen in to so lytul
28 bowndes/ /how mochel coueyteth yt in largesse *and* in gret dooinge
And also sette this ther to // þat many a nasyoun diuerse of tonge
a[n]d of maneres and ek of resoun of hir lyuynge ben enhabyted in
the clos of thilke lytul habytacule/ /to the whiche naciouns / what
32 for deficulte of weyes / and what for deficulte of langages / And
what defawte of vn-vsage *and* entrecomunynge of marchaundise /
nat only the names of syngler men ne may nat streccen / but ek

¹ leaf 60, back.

² gloss: i. vix.

the fame of cytes ne may nat strecchen // at the laste certes in the
tyme of marchus tulius / as hym self writ in his book / þat the
renoun of the comune of rome ne hadden nat passed ne clowmbyn
ouer the Mountaigne þat hyhte caucasus/ /And yit was thikke tyme ⁴
Roome wel waxen / and gretly redowted of the parthes and ek of
oother folk' enhabybynge a-bowte // sestow nat thanne how streyt
and how compressed is thilke glorie / þat ye travaylen ¹A-bowte to
shewe and to multiplie/ /May thanne the glorie of a singler romayne ⁸
strechchen thyder as the fame of the name of Rome may nat clymbyn
ne passen/ /And ek seyesthow nat that the maneres of diuerse folk' and
ek hir lawes ben discordaunt among' hem self/ /So þat thilke thinge
þat som men Iugen worthy of preysynge / oother foolk' Iugen þat it ¹²
is worthi of torment/ /And ther-of comth it þat thogh a man
delyte hym in preysynge of his renoun / he may nat in no wyse
bryngen forth ne spreden his name to many maner poeples // ther-
for euery manere man owhte to ben apayed of his glorie þat is ¹⁶
publyssed among' his owne nesshebours/ /And thilke noble renoun
shal ben restreynynd with-in the bowndes of o manere folk' // but
how many a man þat was ful noble in hys tyme / hath the
wrechched and nedy foryetinge of wryteres put owt of mynde and ²⁰
don away / al be it so þat certes thilke wrytynges profyten lytul /
the whyche wrytynges long' and derk elde doth a-vey / bothe hem
and ek hir actorros // but yow men semeth to geten yow a per-
durablete whan ye thinken þat in tyme to comynge yowre fame shal ²⁴
lasten // but' natheles yif thow wolt maken comparysoun to the
endeles spaces of eternite / what thing hast thow by which thow
mayst reioysen the of long' lastynge of thi name/ /ffor yif ther were
makyd comparyson of the a-bydynge of a moment to .x. thowsand ²⁸
wynter/ /ffor as mochel as bothe the spaces ben ended / ffor yit
hath the moment som porsyoun of it' al though it lytul be / but
natheles thilke selue nowmbyr of yeres / and ek as many yeeres as
ther-to may be multiplyed / ne may nat certes ben comparysoned to ³²
the perdurablete þat is endeles / ffor of thinges þat han ende may be
maked comparysoun / but of thinges that ben with-owtyn ende to

things þat han ende may be makid no comparysoun / and forþi is
 it / þat al thowgh renoun of as longe tyme / as euere the lyst to
 thinken / weere thowt to the regard of eternite þat is vnstaunchable
 4 and infynyt it ne sholde nat oonly semen lytel / but pleyntyche ryht
 nawht / but ye men certes ne konne don noþinge a ryht / but
 yif yt be for the audience of poeple / and for idil rumours / And ye
 forsaken the grete worthinesse of concience and of vertu // and ye
 8 seken yowre gerdouns of the smale wordes of straunge folkes / haue
 now her and vndyrstonde / in ¹the lyhtnesse of swych pride and
 veyne glorye / how a man scornede festyualy and meryly swych
 vanite // whilom þer was a man þat hadde assayed with stryuyng
 12 wordes a nother man / the which nat for vsage of verray vertu / but
 for proude veyne glorye had taken vp on hym falsly the name of a
 philisophre / this rather man þat .I. spak of / thowhte he wolde assaye
 weere he thilke weere a philosophre or no / þat is to seyn yif þat he
 16 wolde han suffred lyhtly in pacience the wronges þat weeren don vn
 to hym // this feynede philosophre took pacience a lytel whyle / and
 whan he hadde resseyuyd wordes of owtrage / he as in stryuyng
 ayein and reioisynge of hym self seyde at the laste ryht thus //
 20 vndyrstondow nat þat .I. am a philosophre / þat oother man
 answerde ayein ful bytyngly and seyde .I. hadde wel vndyrstondyn
 yt yif thou haddest holden thi tonge stille // but what is it² to thise
 noble worthi men / ffor certes of swyche foolk / speke .I. / þat
 24 sekyn glorye with vertu / what is it quod she / what atteyneth
 fame to swyche foolk / whan the body is resoluyd by the deth at
 the laste // ffor yif yt so be þat men dyen in al / þat is to seyn body
 and sowle / the whyche thing owre resoun deffendeth vs to by-
 28 leuen / thanne is ther no glorye in no wyse / for what sholde
 thilke glorye ben // whan he of whom thilke glorye is seyde to be nis
 ryht nawht in no wyse / And yif the sowle whyche þat hath in it
 self science of goode werkes / vnbownden fro the prison of the
 32 erthe³ wendeth frely to the heuene / despyseth it⁴ nat thanne alle
 erthely occupacion / and beinge in heuene reioiseth // þat it is

¹ leaf 61, back.

³ gloss: .i. corporis.

² gloss: .s. fama.

⁴ gloss: .i. anima.

exempt^t fro alle Erthely thinges / as who seith / thanne rekketh the
sowle of no glorie of renon^d of this world

[*The Seventh Metre (leaf 62)*]

Who so pat with ouerthrowynge thought oonly seketh
glorye of fame *and* wenith pat it be souereyn ¹Good // 4
Lat hym looken vp on the brode shewynge contreyes of heuene / *and*
vp on the streyte Cyte of this erthe / And he shal ben ashamyd of
the ences of his name pat may nat fulfyll the litel compas of p^e
Erthe/ /O what coueyten prowde folk to lyften vp hir nekkes in 8
ydel in the dedly yok of this worlde/ /ffor al though pat renon^d
ysprad passynge to ferne poeples / goth by diuerse tonges // *and* al
though pat grete howses or kynredes shynen with cler titlys of
honours / yit natheles deth despyseth alle heye glorye of fame // 12
And deth wrappeth to-gydere the heye heuedes *and* the lowe / *and*
makith egal *and* euene the heyoste to the loweste // where wonen
now the bones of trewe fabrycius / what is now brutus / or stierne
catoun // the thynne fame yit^t lastynge of hir ydel names is marked 16
with a fewe letterys/ /but al though pat we han knowen the fayre
wordes of the fames of hem // it is nat^t yeuen to knowe hem pat ben
dede *and* consume^t/ /Liggeth² thanne stille al owtrelly vnknowable //
ne fame ne maketh yow nat knowe/ /And yif ye weene to lyuen the 20
longere for wynde of yowre mortal name / whan o cruwel day shal
rauysshe yow thanne is the seconde deth dwellynge vn to yow //
Glose // the fyrst deth he clepith heere departynge of p^e body *and*
the sowle/ /And the seconde deth he clepith as heere the stintynge 24
of the renon^d of fame

¶ The viij prose [*margin, leaf 63*]

BVt for as mochel as thou shalt nat wenen quod she pat I
bere vntretable batayle ayeins fortune // yit som tyme it by-
falleth pat she desseyuable desserueth to han ryht good 28
thank of men/ *and* pat is whan she hire self opneth / *and*
whan she descouere^t hir frownt / *and* sheweth ³hir maneres per

¹ leaf 62, back.

² gloss: .s. superbi.

³ leaf 63, back.

auenture yit vndirstondesthow nat þat .I. shal seye // it is a
 wondyr þat .I. desyre to telle / and forthi vnnethe may .I.
 vnpleyten my sentense with wordes for .I. deme þat contraryos
 4 fortune profiteth more to men than fortune debonayre/ ffor al wey
 whan fortune semeth debonayre than she lyeth falsly in by-hetyng
 the hope of welefulnesse // but forsothe contraryos fortune is alwey
 sothfast / whan she sheweth hir self vnstable thorw hyr chaungynge /
 8 / the amyable fortune desseyueth folk / the contrarye fortune
 techeth / the amyable fortune byndeth with the beaute of false
 goodys the hertes of folk þat vsen hem / the contrarye fortune
 vnbyndeth hem ye þ^e knowynge of freele welefulnesse / the
 12 amyable fortune maysthow sen alwey wyndynge and flowynge / and
 euere mysknowynge of hir self // the contrarye fortune is a-tempre
 and restreynyd and wys thorw excersyse of hir aduersyte / at the
 laste amyable fortune with hir flatterynges draweth mys-wandryng
 16 men fro the souereyne good // the contraryos fortune ledith ofte
 folk ayein to sothfast goodes and haleth hem ayein as with an hooke /
 weenestthow thanne þat thow owhtest to leten this a lytel thing /
 þat this aspre and horrible fortune hath discoueryd to the / the
 20 thowhtes of thy trewe frendes / ffor why this ilke fortune hath
 departyd and vncoueryd to the bothe the certeyn vysages and ek the
 dowtos visages of thy felawes / whan she departyd away fro the /
 she took away hyr frendes and lafte the thyne frendes / now whan
 24 thow were ryche and weleful as the semede / with how mochel
 woldesthow han bowht the fulle knowynge of this // þat is to seyn
 the knowynge of thy verray freendes / now pleyne the nat thanne
 of Rychesse .I. lorn / syn thow hast fowndyn the moste presyos
 28 kynde of Rychesse þat is to seyn thy verray frendes

¶ The viii Metur [margin, leaf 64, back]

32 **T**Hat þ^e world with stable feith / varieth acordable chaung-
 ynges // þat the contraryos qualite of elementus¹ holden
 amongr hemself aliaunce perdurable / þat phebus¹ the sonne
 with his goldene chariet / bryngeth forth the rosene day- /
 þat the mone hath commaundement ouer the nyhtes / whiche

¹ MS element3, phebj.

nyhtes *hesperus* the eue sterre hat browt // *pat þe* se gredy to flowen
constreyneth with a certeyn ende hise floodes / So *pat* it is nat lueful
to streche hise brode termes or bowndes vp on the erthes/ // *pat* is
to seyn to couere alle the erthe / Al this a-cordaunce of thinges is 4
bownden with looue / *pat* gouerneth erthe *and* see / *and* hath¹ also
commaundementus to the heuenes *and* yif this looue slakede the
brydelis / alle thinges *pat* now louen hem to-gederes / wolden
maken a batayle contynuely / *and* stryuen to fordoon the fason of 8
this worlde / the which they now leden in acordable feith by fayre
moeuynges/ /this looue halt to-gideres poeples loygned with an
hooly bond / *and* knytteth sacrement of maryages of chaste looues //
And loue enditeth lawes to trewe felawes/ /O weleful weere man- 12
kynde / yif thilke loue *pat* gouerneth heuene gouerned yowre corages //

Explicit liber 2^{us}./

[leaf 64, back.]

Incipit liber 3 ./

[BOOK III.]

¶ The fyrste prose [margin, leaf 65, back]

BY this she hadde endid hire songe / whan the swetnesse of
hire ditee hadde thorw perced me *pat* was desirous of
herkninge *and* .I. astoned hadde yit streyhte myn Eres / 16
pat is to seyn to herkne the bet / what she wolde seye/ /So
pat a litel here-after .I. seyde thus/ /O thow *pat* art souereyn comfort
of Angwissos corages / So thow hast remounted *and* norryshed me
with the weyhte of thy sentences *and* with delit of thy syngynge // 20
So *pat* .I. trowe nat now *pat* .I. be vnpanygal to the strokes of fortune /
as who seyth .I. dar wel now suffren al the assautes of fortune *and*
wel deffende me fro hyr/ /*and* tho remedies whyche *pat* thow
seydest hire byforn weren ryht sharpe Nat oonly *pat* .I. am nat 24
a-grysen of hem now // but .I. desiros of herynge axe gretely to

¹ gloss: .s. amor.

heeren the remedyes/ /than seyde she thus // þat feeled .I. ful wel
quod she/ /whan þat thou ententyf and styлле rauysshedest my
wordes/ /and .I. abood til þat thou haddest swych habyte of thy
4 thought as thou hast now // or elles tyl þat .I. my self had maked
to the the same habyt / which þat is a moore verray thing / And
certes the remenaunt of thynges þat ben yit to seye / ben swyche/
/þat fyrst whan men tasten hem they ben bytynge / but whan they
8 ben resseyued with-inne a whyht than ben they swete / /but for
thou seyst þat thou art so desirous to herkne hem/ /wit how gret
brannynge woldesthou glowen / yif thou wystest whyder .I. wol
leden the / whydyre is þat quod .I. / to thilke verray welefulnesse
12 quod she/ /of whyche thyng herte dremeth // but for as moche as
thy syhte is ocupied and disturbed / by Imagynasyon of herthely
thynges / thou mayst nat yit sen thilke selue welefulnesse / do quod
.I. and shewe me / what is thilke verray welefulnesse / .I. preye the
16 with-howte tarynge/ /þat wole .I. gladly don quod she / for the cause
of the / but .I. wol fyrst ¹marken the by-words and I wol enforcen
me to en-formen the / thilke false cause of blysfulnesse þat thou
more knowest / so þat whan thou hast fully by-holden thilke false
20 goodes and torned thyne eyen to þat oother syde / thou mowe knowe
the clernesse of verray blysfulnesse /

The fyrst metur [from margin]

24 **W**ho so wole sowe a feeld plentiuos / lat hym fyrst
delyuere it fro thornes / and kerue a sonder with hijs
hook the bosses and the fern / so þat þ^e korn may
comen heuy of heres and of greynes / hony is the
more swete yif mowthes han fyrst tastyd sauoures þat ben wyckyd //
the sterres shynen more agreably / whan the wynd nothus leteth hise
28 plowngy blastes / and after þat lucifere the day sterre hath chasyd
away the dirke nyht the day the fayrere ledith the rosene hors of the
sonne // And ²Ryht so thou by-holdynge fyrst the false goodes /
bygyn to with-drawn thy nekke fro the yok of Erthely affeccyouns/
32 /And after-ward the verre goodes shollen entren in to thy corage //

¹ leaf 66.

² leaf 66, back.

¶ The 2^de prose / [leaf 68, margin].

THo fastnede she a lytul the syht^t of hir eyen *and with-drowh*
hire / ryht as it weere in to the streyte Cyte of hir thowht /
and bygan to speke ryht thus // alle the cures *quod* she ¹Of
mortal foolk^t / whiche *þat* trauaylen hem in many manere 4
studies / goon certes by diuerse weyes/ /but natheles they enforſen
hem alle to comyn oonly to oon ende of blysfulnesse // And blysful-
nesse is swyche a good / *þat* who so *þat* hath geten it^t / he ne may
ouer that no thing^t moore desyre / *and* this thing is forsothe *p*^e 8
souereyn good / *þat* conteyneth in hym self alle manere goodes/ /to
p^e whyche good yif ther faylyde any thing / it myhte nat ben clepyd
souereyn good / /for thanne weere ther som good owt of this ilke
souereyn good *þat* myhte ben desyred / now is it clere *and* certein 12
thanne *þat* blysfulnesse is a perfyt estat^t by the congregasyon of alle
goodes // the whyche blysfulnesse as I haue seyde alle mortal foolk
enforſen hem to geten by dyuerse wyse/ /ffor why the coueytise of
verray good is naturelly yplanted in the hertes of men/ /but the 16
mys-wandrynge error mys-ledeth hem in to false goodes/ /of the
whyche men / som of hem wenyn *þat* souereyn good be to lyuen
with owte nede of any thing / *and* trauaylen hem to be haboundaunt^t
of Rychesses / *and* som oother men demen *þat* souereyn good ben / 20
for to ben ryht digne of reuerence / *and* enforſen hem to ben reuer-
enced a-mong hyr nesshebors / by the honours *þat* they han ygeten /
and some folk ther ben *þat* holden *þat* ryht heyh power be souereyn
good *and* enforſen hem for to regnen or elles to Ioignen hem to hem 24
þat regnen // *and* it semeth to some oother foolk / *þat* noblesse of
renonⁿ be the souereyn good / *and* hasten hem to geten gloryos name /
by the artz of werre *and* of pees // *and* many folk mesuren *and*
gessen *þat* souereyn good by Ioye *and* gladnesse / *and* wenen *þat* it be 28
ryht blysful thyng / to plowngen hem in voluptuos delit/ *and* ther
ben folk *þat* entrechaungenthe causes *and* the endes of thyse forseyde
goodes / As they *þat* desyren rychesses to han power *and* delytes //
Or elles they desyren power for to han moneye or for cause of renon/ 32
/In thise thynges *and* in swyche oothre thynges is torned alle the

¹ leaf 68, back.

entencion) of desyrynges *and* of werkes of men / as thus / noblesse
and fauore of poeple / whyche þat yeueth to men as it semeth hem
 amanere clernesse of renon // *and* wyf *and* chyl dren þat men desyren
 4 for cause of delit *and* of merynesse // but forsothe ¹frendes ne sholden
 nat ben rekned a-mong tho godes of fortune / but of vertu / for yt
 ys a ful hooly manere thyng / alle thise oothre thinges forsothe ben
 takyn for cause of power / or elles for cause of delit / Certes now am
 8 I redy to referren the goodes of the body to thise forseyde thinges
 abouen / ffor yt semeth þat strengthe *and* gretnesse of body yeuen
 power *and* worthynesse / *and* þat beaute *and* swetnesse yeuen
 noblesses *and* glorie of renon / *and* hele of body semeth yeuen delit /
 12 / In alle thise thinges it semyth oonly þat blysfulnesse is desired /
 ffor why thilke thing þat euery man desyreth most / ouer alle thinges /
 he demeth þat yt be the souereyn good but .I. haue deffyned þat
 blysfulnesse is the souereyn good / ffor whych euery whyht demeth
 16 that thilke estat þat he desyreth ouer alle thinges þat it be blysful-
 nesse / Now hast thou thanne byform thy eyen / almeſt al the
 purposed forme of the welefulnesse of man-kyngde / þat is to seyn /
 Rycheſſes / honours / power / *and* glorie / *and* delit / the whiche delit
 20 oonly conſyderede Epicurus // And Iuged *and* establyſſed þat delit is
 the souereyn good / ffor as moche al alle oothre thinges as hym
 thowhte by-refte away Ioye *and* myrthe fram the herte / but I retorne
 ayein to the studies of men / of whiche men / the corage alwey
 24 reherſeth *and* ſeketh the souereyn good / al be it ſo / þat it be with
 a dirkyd memorye / but he not by whiche paath / Ryht as a dronken
 man not nat by whiche paath he may retorne hym to hys hows /
 ſemeth it thanne þat folk foleyen *and* erren / þat enforcen hem to
 28 haue nede of nothyng // Certes ther nis non oother thyng þat may ſo
 wel performe blysfulnesse / as an estat plentyuous of alle goodes / þat
 ne hath nede of non oother thing / but þat it is ſuffysaunt of
 hymſelf / vnto hym ſelf / And foleyen ſwyche folk thanne þat
 32 wenen þat / that thilke thing þat is ryht good / þat it be ek ryht
 worthy of honour *and* of Reuerence / certes nay // ffor that thing
 nys neyther fowl / ne worthy to ben deſpiſed þat welneyh / alle

the entencyon of mortal folk trauaylen for to geten yt/ *and*
 powere owhte nat þat ek / to ben rekened amonges goodes/ *what*
 elles / ffor it is nat to wene þat thilke thyng þat is most worthy of
 alle thinges be feble *and with-owte* strengthe // *And cleernesse of* 4
 reynoun owhte þat to ben despised/ ¹*Certes* ther may no man for-
 sake þat alle thyng þat is ryht excellent *and noble* þat yt ne semeth
 to ben ryht cleer *and renomede*. / *ffor certes* it nedith nat to seye þat
 blysfulnesse be Angwyssos ne drery ne subgyd to greuauces ne to 8
 sorwes/ /syn þat in ryht lytel thynges folk seken to haue *and* to
 vsen þat may delyten hem / *Certes* thise ben the thinges þat men
 wolen *and* desyren to geten/ /*And* for this cause desyren they /
 Rychesses dignites / regnes / glorie / *and* delices / ffor therby wenen 12
 they to han suffyssaunse / honour / power / renoun / *and* gladnesse/
 /than is yt good / þat men seken thus by so many diuerse studijs/
 /In whiche desyr it may lyhtly ben shewyd / how gret is the strengthe
 of nature / for how so þat men han diuerse sentences *and* discordynge/ 16
 /*Allegates* men acordyn alle in louynge the ende of good/ / /

¶ The 2^{de} Metur [leaf 70, back, margin]

IT liketh me to shewe by subtyl song / *with* slakke *and*
 delitable son of strenges / how þat nature myhty enclyneth
and flitteth the gouernementz of thinges/ *and* by whyche 20
 lawes she purueyable kepith the grete world / *and* how she
 byndynge restreyneth alle thynges by a bonde þat may nat ben
 vnbownde/ /Al be it so þat the lyouns of the centre of pene / beren
 the fayre chaynes / *and* taken metes of the handes of folk' þat yeuen 24
 it hem / *and* dredyn hyr sturdy maystres / of whiche they ben wont
 to suffren betinges/ /yif þat hyr horyble mowthes ben by-bled þat
 is to seyn of bestys deuowred / hyr corage of tyme passed þat hath
 ben ydel *and* rested repeyareth ayein/ /*And* they roren greuosly / 28
and remembryn on hyr nature / *and* slaken hyr nekkes fram hyr
 chaynes vnbownde // *And* hyr mayster fyrst to-torn *with* blody toth/
 assayeth the wode wrathes of hem // this to seyn / they fretyn
 hyr mayster/ /*And* the Iangelynge bryd þat syngeth on the heye 32
 braunches / þat is to seyn in the wode / *and* after is enclosed in a

¹ leaf 69, back.

streight cage/ /Al thowh þat the pleynynge bysynesse of men yeueth
hem honyede drynkes / and large metes with swete studie/ yit
natheles yif thylke bryd skyppeynge owi of hyr streyte cage / seth
4 the agreables shadewes of the wodes / she defowlyth with hyr feet
hyr metes I-shad / and seketh mowrnynge oonly the wode/ /and
twiterith desyrynge the wode with hyr swete voys/ /the yerde of
atre þat is haled a-down by myhty strengthe bowith redyly the crop
8 adown/ /but yif þat the hand of hym þat yt bent lat it goon ayein /
Anon the crop loketh vp ryht to heuene/ /the sonne phebz þat
falleth at euen in the westrene waves / retorneth ayein est sones /
hys carte by pryue paath there as it is wont aryse/ /Alle thinges
12 seken ayein to hyr propre cours / and alle thinges reioysen hem of
hyr retornynge ayein to hyr nature // Ne non ordynaunce nis by-
taken to thinges / but þat / that hath Ioyned the endynge to the
bygynnyng/ /And hat¹ maketh the cours of it self stable / þat it
16 ² chaungeth nat from hys propre kynde

¶ The 3^{de} prose [leaf 72, margin]

20 **C**ertes also ye men þat ben Erthelythe beestes dremen alwey
yowre bygynnyng / Al though it be with a thyne Imagyn-
acyon / and by a manere thought // al be it nat clerly / ne
perfytyly / ye loken fram a fer to thylke verray fyn of blys-
fulnesse // and therfore naturel en³sentencyon ledith yow to thylke
verray good/ /but many manere errours mys-torneth yow therfro/
/considere now yif that by thylke thinges by whiche a man weneth to
24 geten hym blysfulnesse / yif þat he may comyn to thylke ende þat
he weneth to come by nature/ /ffor yif þat moneye or honours / or
thyse oother forseide thinges / bryngen to men swych a thyng / þat
no good ne fayle hem / ne semeth fayle/ /Certes than wole .I. graunte
28 þat they ben maketh blysful by thylke thinges þat they han geten/
/but yif so be þat thylke thynges ne mowen nat performen þat
they by-heten / and þat ther be defaute of manye goodes/ /sheweth
it nat thanne clerly þat false beaute of blysfulnesse / is knowen
32 and ataynt in thylke thynges/ /ffyrst and forward / thow thy
self þat haddest habundaunces of Rycheses nat long agoon .I.

¹ gloss: .s. ordo.

² leaf 71.

³ leaf 72, back.

axe yif þat in the habundaunce of alle thylike Rychesses / thow were
neuer angwissos or sory in thy corage of any wrong or greunaunce þat
by-tydde the on any syde/ /Certes quod .I. it ne remenbryth me nat
þat euere I was so free of my thowht þat .I. ne was alwey in 4
angwyssh of som what/ /And was nat þat quod she for þat the
lacked som what / þat thow noldest nat han lacked/ /Or elles thow
haddest þat thow noldest nat han had/ /ryht so is it quod .I. //
thanne desiredyst thow the presence of þat oon / and the absence of 8
þat oother / .I. graunte wel quod .I. // fforsothe quod she than nedeth
ther som what þat euery man desireth/ /ye ther nedeth quod I /
Certes quod she and he þat hath lacke or nede of awht nis nat in
euery wey suffysaunte to hym self / no quod I. // And thow quod 12
she in al the plente of thy Rychesses haddest thilke lakke of suffys-
aunse // what elles quod .I. / thanne may nat Rychesses makyn þat a
man nis nedy / ne þat he be suffisaunt to hym self / and þat was it
þat they by-hyhten as it semeth/ /And ek certes .I. trowe þat thys 16
be gretly to consydere / þat moneye ne hath nat in hys owne kynde /
þat it ne may ben by-nomen of hem þat han it / Mawgre hem/ /.I.
hy-knowe it wel quod .I./ /why sholdesthow nat by-knownen it
quod she / whan euery day the strengere folk by-nemyn it fro the 20
febelere / Mangre hem/ /ffor whennes comyn elles alle thyse foreyne
compleyntes or quereles of pletynges / but for þat men axen ayeyn
here ¹Moneye þat hath ben by-nomen by force or by gyle and alwey
mawgre hem // ryht so is it quod .I. // than quod she hath a man 24
nede to seken hym foreyne help by wyche he may deffende hys
moneye/ /who may sey nay quod .I./ /Certes quod she and hym
nedede non help / yif he ne hadde no moneye þat he myhte leese/
/þat is dowteles quod .I. // than is this thing torned in to the con- 28
trarye quod she / ffor Rychesses þat men wenen sholde make suffis-
aunce / they makyn a man rather han nede of foreyne help/ /whych
is the manere or the gyse quod she þat Rychesse may dryue away nede
Ryche folk may they neyther han hungryr ne thirst // thyse Ryche 32
men may the fele no coold on hyr lymes on wyntur/ /but thow wolt
Answeren / þat Ryche men han y-now / wher-with they may staunchen

hyr hongyr / slaken here thurst *and* don a-wey coold/ /In thys wyse
may nede be counforted by Rycheses // but¹ certes nede ne may al
vtrely ben don a-wey // ffor thowgh / this nede þat is alwey gapyng
4 *and* gredy be fulfyd with Rycheses *and* axe any thyng / yit dwelleth
thanne A nede þat myhte be fulfyd/ /.I. holde me styll *and* telle
nat how þat lytel thyng suffiseth to nature // but certes to Aueryce
ynowh ne suffiseth no thing/ /ffor syn þat Rychesse ne may nat al
8 doon alwey nede / but Rycheses maken nede / what may it thanne
be / þat ye wenen þat Rycheses mowen yeuen yow suffisaunce

¶ The 3.^{de} Metur [*margin, leaf 73*]

12 **A**L weere it so þat A Ryche coueytos man hadde a Ryuer
fletynge al of gold / yit sholde it neuer staunchyn hys
coueytise // And thow he hadde hys nekke ychargyd
¹with presios stones of the Rede see / *and* thow he do
Ere hys feeldes plentyuous with An hundred oxen/ /neuer ne shal hys
bytynge bysynesse for-leten hym whyl he leuith / ne the lyhte
16 Rycheses ne shol nat beryn hym compaignie / whan he is ded //

¶ The 4.th prose [*Leaf 73, back, margin*]

20 **B**Vt dignitees to whom they ben comyn maken they hym
honorable¹ *and* reuerent¹ han they nat so gret strengthe / þat
they may putte vertuus in the hertes of foolk¹ þat vsen the
lordshippys of hem/ /Or elles may they don a-wey the
vyces/ /Certes they ne be nat wont¹ to don away wykkydnesse/ /but
they ben wont rather shewen wykkydnesse/ /*and* ther-of comth it
þat .I. haue ryht gret¹ desdaign / þat dignitees ben yeuen ofte to
24 wykkyd men/ /ffor which thyng Catullus clepyd a consul of Rome/
þat hyhte nomyus postum or boch/ /as who seyht he clepyd hym a
congregasyn² of vyces in hys brest as a postum is ful of corupsyun//
Al were this nomyus set in chayre of dignite/ /Sesthow nat
28 thanne how gret¹ fylonye dignitees don to wykkyd men/ /Certes
vnworthynesse of wykkyd men sholde be the lasse I-sene / yif they
nere renommed of none honours/ /Certes thow thyself ne myhtest nat
ben browht with as manye perils as þou myhtest suffren þat thow

¹ gloss: ironice.

² leaf 75.

woldest beren the magistrat *with decorat* / þat is to seyn / þat for no
peril þat myhte befallen the / by offense of the kyng theodoryke /
thow noldest nat be felawe in gouernaunce *with decorat* / whan þou
saye þat he hadde wykkyd corage of a lykoros shrewe *and* of an 4
acusor / *ne* .I. ne may nat for swyche honours Iugen hem worthy of
Reuerence þat .I. deme *and* holde vnworthy to han thylke same
honours / *now* yif thou saye a man þat were fulfild of wysdom /
Certes thou ne myhtest nat deme þat he were vnworthy to the 8
honour Or elles to the wysdom of which he is fulfylde // No quod .I. /
/Certes dignitees apertienien proprely to vertu *and* vertu transporteth
dignite anon to thilke man to whych she hyr self is conioigned. //
And for as moche as honours of poeple ne may nat maken folk digne 12
of honour / it is wel seyn clerly / þat they ne han¹ no propre beaute
of dignite // And yit men owhten taken mor heed in thys / ffor yif
so be þat a wykkyd whyght² be so mochel the fowlere *and* the moore
owt cast / þat he is despised of most folk / so as dignete ne may nat 16
maken shrewes digne of Reuerence / the whych shrewes dignete
sheweth to moche foolk / *thanne* makith dignete shrewes rather so
moche more despised than preysed / *and* forsothe nat vnpunished /
þat is for to seyn þat shrewes reuengen hem ayeinward vp on dig- 20
netees / ffor they yilden ayein to dignetes as gret gerdoun whan they
by-spetten *and* defowlen dignetes *with* hyr vylenie / *and* for as
mochel as thou mowe knowe þat thilke verray reuerence ne may nat
comen by thyse shadwye transitorye dignitees vnderstond now thus / 24
yif that a man hadde vsed *and* had many maner dignitees of consules /
/and weere comyn *per* Auenture amonges straunge nasyons / sholde
thilke honour maken hym worshipful / *and* redowted of straunge foolk /
/Certes yif þat honour of poeple / weere a naturel yift to dignites / 28
it ne myhte neuer cesen now² Amonges no manere foolk to don hys
offyce / ryht as fyre in euery contre ne stynteth nat to eschaufen *and*
to ben hoot / but for as mochel as for to ben holden honourable or
reuerent ne comyth nat to foolk of hyr propre strengthe of nature / 32
but oonly of þe false opynion of foolk þat is to seyn wenen þat
dignitees maken foolk digne of honour / Anon therfore whan þat

¹ gloss: .s. honours.² leaf 75, back.

they comyn there as folk ne knowen nat thylke dignitees / hyr
honours vaneessen away *and* þat anon / but þat is amonges straunge
folk maysthow seyn / ne amonges hem ther they weeren born ne
4 duren nat thylke dignitees alwey // Certes the dignite of the prouost-
trye of Rome was whylom a gret power / now is it nothyng but An
Idel name *and* the rente of Senatorye a gret charge / And yif a
whyht whylom hadde the office to taken heede to the vytayles of the
8 poeple / as of corn *and* oother thynges he was holden amonges grete /
but what thyng is now more owt cast than thylke prouosttrye /
and as .I. haue seyð a lytel her-by-forn þat thylke thyng þat hath no
propre beaute of hym self resseyueth som tyme prys *and* shynyng
12 *and* som tyme lesyth it / by the opynion of vsaunces / now yif þat
dignitees thanne ne mowen nat makyn foolk digne of Reuerence *and*
yif þat dignitees wexen fowle of hyr wylle by the felthe of shrewes /
and yif dignitees lesyn hyr shynyng by chaungynge of tymes /
16 /And yif they wexen fowle by estymacyon of poeple / what is it þat
they han in hem self of beaute þat owhte ben desyred / as who seyth
non / thanne ne mowen they yeuen no beaute of dignete to non oother

¶ The 4th Metur [leaf 76, margin]

20 **A**L be it so þat the prwde nero with alle hys woode luxurie /
kembde hym / *and* a-paraylede hym with fayre purpres
of tyrye *and* with whyte perles / Algates yit throf he
hateful to alle foolk / this is to seyn þat al was he be-
hated of alle folk / yit this wycked nero hadde gret lorshippe / *and*
24 yaf whylom to the reuerenc; senatours the vnworshipful setes of dig-
nitees // vnworshipful setes he clepyth heere / for þat nero þat was
so wykkyd yaf the dignetes / who so wolde thanne resonably wenen
þat blysfulnesse were in swyche honours / as ben yeuen by vysyos
28 shrewes . . .

¶ The 5th prose [leaf 77, margin]

32 **B**Vt Regnes *and* famylarites of kynges May they maken a man
to ben myhty // how elles / whan hyr blysfulnesse dureth
perpetualy / but certes the olde age of tyme passed *and* ek
of present tyme now is ful ensaunpyles how þat kynges
ben chaunged in to wrechednesse owt of hyr welefulnesse / O a

noble thing¹ and a cleer thyng is power / þat is nat fownden myhty
to kepen it self // and yif þat power of Reaumes be auctor and
makere of blysfulnesse / yif thylke power lacketh on any syde /
Amenusith it nat thilke blysfulnesse and bryngeth in wrechchednesse/ 4
/but yit al be it so þat the Reaumes of mankynde strechchen brode/
yit mot ther node ben moche folk / ouer whyche þat euery kyng
ne hath no lorshipe ne comaundement // And certes vp on thilke side
þat power fayleth whych þat maketh folk blyful/ /ryht on þat 8
same side none power entreth vndyr-nethe þat maketh hem wrechches/
in this manere thanne / moten kynges han more persoun of wrech-
chednesse than of welefulnesse/ /A tyraunt þat was kyng of sysile/
þat hadde assayed the peril of hys estat / shewede by symylytude 12
the dredes of Reaumes by gastnesse of a swerd þat heng ouer the
heued of hys famyler // what thyng ¹is thanne this power / þat may
nat doon away the bytynges of bysynesse / ne eschue the prikkes of
drede/ /and certes yit wolden they² lyuen in sikernesse / but they 16
may nat / and yif they gloryfye hem in hyr power/ /holdest thou
thanne þat thylke man be myhty / þat thou seyst þat he wolde don
þat he may nat doon/ /and holdest þou thanne hym a myhty man
þat hat enuyrowned hyse sydes with men of armes or seriauntz / and 20
dredith more hem þat he maketh agast than they dredin hym / and
þat is put in þ^e handes of hise seruauntz / for he sholde seme myhty/
/but of famyleres or seruauntz of kynges what sholde .I. telle the
any thing / syn þat .I. my self haue shewyd the / þat Reames hem 24
self ben ful of gret feblesse / the whyche famyleres certes the Ryal
power of kynges in hool estat and in estat abated ful ofte throweth
adown/ /Nero constreynede Senek hyr famyler and hys mayster to
chesen on what deth he wolde deyen/ /Antonius comaundede þat 28
knyghtes slowen / with hyr swerdes papynian hys famyler/ /which
papynian þat hadde ben longe tyme ful myhty amonges hem of the
court/ /and yit certes they wolden bothe han renounced hyr power /
of whyche two // senecke enforcedde hym to yeuen to Nero hyse 32
Rychesses / and also to han goon in to solutarye exil // but whan the
grete weyhte / þat is to seyn of lordes power or of fortune drawith

¹ leaf 77, back.² gloss: .s. tyrans.

hem þat sholen falle / neyther of hem ne myhte do þat he wolde/
/what thing is thanne thylke power / þat thowgh men han it / yit
they ben agast/ /and whanne thow woldest han it thow nart nat
4 siker / and yif thow woldest forleten it thow mayst nat eschuen it/
/but wheyther swyche men ben frendes at nede / as ben conseyled
by fortune and nat by vertu // Certes swyche foolk as weleful fortune
maketh frendes / Contraryos fortune makyth hem enemys // And
8 what pestylence is moore myhty for to a-noye a wyht than a famylier
enemy // ./:

¶ The 5.th Metur [Leaf 78, margin]

12 **W** Ho so wole be myhty he mot daunten hys erwel corage/
/ ne putte nat hys nekke ouercomen vndyr the fowle
reynes of lecherye/ /ffor al be it so þat thy lordshype
strechche so fer / thath the contre of ynde quakyth at
thy comaundementz or at thy lawes / and þat the last Ile in þ^e see
þat hyhte tyle / be thral to the / yit yif thow mayst nat putten a-why
16 thy fowle dyrke desyrs / and dryuen owt fro the wretched com-
playntes/ /Certes it nis no powere þat thow hast. /

¶ The 6th prose [leaf 79, margin]

20 **B** Vt glorie how deceyuable and how fowl is it ofte/ /ffor
whych thyng nat vnskyllfully a tragedyen / þat is to seyn a
makere of ditees þat hyhten tragedies / cryde and seyde /
O glorie // Glorie quod she // thow nart nothyng elles / to
thowsandes of foolkes/ /but a gret swellere of Eres / for manye han
had ful gret renoun / by the false opynion of þ^e poeple and what
24 thyng may ben thowht fowlere thanne swyche preysynge/ /ffor
thylke foolk þat ben preysyd falsly / they moten nedes han shame of
hyr preysynges/ /And yif þat foolk han geten hem thonk of preysynge
by hyr desertes / what thyng hath thylke prys eched or encreased to
28 þ^e consience of wyse folkk // þat Mesuren hyr good / nat by the
Rumor of the poeple / but by the sothfastnesse of consience/ /and
yif it seme a fayr thyng a man to han encreased and spred his name /
than folwith it / þat it is demed to ben a fowl thing/ /yif it ne be
32 Isprad and encreased / but as .I. seyde a lytul her-by-for / þat syn

ther mot nedes ben many foolk / to whyche foolk the renoun of a man
 ne may nat comen / it be-falleth þat he þat thow wenest be glorios
 and renomd / semeth in the nexte partye of the Erthes to ben /
 with-owte glorye and with-owhte renoun / And Certes amonges thyse 4
 thynges .I. ne trowe nat þat the prys and grace of the poeple / nis
 neyther worthy to ben Remembred / ne cometh of wyse Iugement Ne
 is ferme perdurably / but now of thys name of gentellesse / what
 man is it þat ne may wel sen how veyn and how flyttynge a thyng it 8
 is // ffor yif the name of gentellesse be referred to renoun and
 clernesse of lynage / thanne is gentyl name but a foreyne thyng /
 þat is to seyn to hem that gloryfien hem of hyr lynage / ffor it
 semeth þat gentellesse be a manere preysynge þat comth of the 12
 deserte of auncestris // And yif preysynge makyth gentillesse / thanne
 moten they nedes be gentyl þat ben preysyd // ffor which thing it
 folueth / þat yif thow ne haue no gentellesse of thy self // þat is to
 seyn preys þat comth of thy deserte / fforeyne gentylesse ne maketh 16
 the nat gentyl but certes yif ther be any good in gentylesse / .I.
 trowe it be al ononly thys / þat it semeth as þat a manere necessite be
 inposed to gentel men / for þat they ne sholden nat owtrayen / or
 forlyuen fro the vertuus of hyr noble kynrede 20

[The 6th. Metre, leaf 79, back]

AL the lynage of men þat ben in Erthe ben of semblable
 byrthe / On allone is fadyr of thynges / On allone
 mynystreth alle thynges / he yaf to þe sonne hyse beemes
 he yaf to the moene hyse hornes / he yaf the men to þe 24
 Erthe / he yaf the sterres to the heuene / he encloseth with men-
 brys the sowles þat comen fram hyse hys sete / thanne comyn alle
 mortal folk of noble sode / why noysen ye or bosten of yowre Eldres /
 ffor yif thow loke yowre bygynnyng And God yowre auctor and 28
 yowre makere thanne nis ther no forlyued wyht / but yif he norysse
 hys corage vn to vyces / and forlete his propre burthe //

¶ The 7th prose. [leaf 80]

4 **B**Vt what shal .I. seye of delites of bodye / of whyche delices
the desyrynges ben ful of Angwyssh/ /And the fu[l]fyllinges
of hem ben ful of penaunce/ /how gret sykenesse *and* how
8 gret soruwes vn-sufferable ryht as a manere frut of wyckyd-
nesse/ /ben thilke delyces wont to bryngen to the bodyes of folk þat
vsen hem/ /Of whyche delytes I not what Ioye may ben had of hyr
moeyunge/ /but thys wot .I. wel þat who so euere wole remenbryn
12 hym ¹Of hyse luxures / he shal wel vndyrstonde þat the yssues² of
delices ben sorful *and* sorye // And yif thylike delices mowen
makyn folk blysful / than by þe same cause moten thyse bestys ben
clepyd blysful of whyche bestys al the entencyon hasteth to fulfyll
16 hyr bodyly Iolyte / *and* the gladnesse of wyf *and* chyldren weere an
honest thyng / but it hath ben seyde // þat it is ouer mochel ayeins
kynde / þat chyldren han ben fownden tormentours to hyr fadres .I.
nat how manye/ /Of whyche chyldren how bytynge is euere con-
dycion / it nedeth nat to tellen it the / þat hast or thys tyme assayed
it / *and* art yit now angwyssos/ /In thys approue .I. the sentence of
my dyssyppe Eurydyppys That seyde þat he þat hath no chyldren ys
weleful by infortune /

¶ The .7.th Metur [leaf 80, back]

20 **E**Very delit hath this / þat it Anguisseth hem *with* prikkes
þat vsen it/ /it resembleth to thise flyenge flyes þat we
clepyn ben / þat after he hath shad hyse agreable honyes/
/he fleth away / *and* styngeth the hertes of hem þat ben
24 ysmyte *with* bytynge ouerlonge holdyng //

¶ The 8th prose [leaf 81, back]

28 **N**Ow is it no dowte thanne þat thise weyes ne ben amanere
mysledynges to blysfulnesse/ /ne þat they ne mowe nat
ledyn folk thyder / as they by-heten to leden hem/ /but
with how grete harmes thise for-seyde weyes ben enlaced/
/I shal shewe the shortly/ /ffor why yif thou enforcest the to
asemble moneye / thou most by-reuen hym hys moneye þat hath it/

¹ leaf 80, back.

² gloss: .s. endes.

/and yif thow wolt shynen with dignitees thow most by-sechen
and supplien hem þat yeuen tho dignitees/ /and yif thow coueytyst
by honour to gon byforn oother folk / thow shal defowle thy-self
thorw humblesse of axynge / yif thow desyrest power/ /thow shalt 4
be a-waytez of thy subgit; anoyosly ben cast vndyr by many perylles //
Axesthow glorye // thow shalt ben so destrat by aspere thinges
þat thow shalt forgoon sykernesse And yif thow wolt leden thy lyf
in delices / euery wyht shal despisen the and forleten the / as thow 8
that art thral to thing þat is ryht fowl and brwtel/ /þat is to seyn
seruaunt to thy body/ /now is it thanne wel seen / how lytel and
how brotel ¹possessyon they coueyten þat putten the goodes of the
body abouen hyr owne reson/ /ffor maysthow sormounten thyse 12
Olyfaunt; in gretnesse or weyhty of body Or maysthow ben strengere
than the bole / maysthow ben swyftere than the tygre / by-hold the
spaces and þe stablenesse / and the swyft cours of the heuene/ /and
stynt som tyme to wondren on fowle thinges / the whych heuene 16
certes / nis nat rather for thyse thynges to ben wondred vp on / than
for the reson by wych it is gouerned // but the shynyng of thy
forme / þat is to seyn þe beaute of thy body/ /how swyfly passynge
is it / and how transytorye/ /Certes it is more flyttynge than the 20
mutabylyte of flowres of the somer seson/ /for so arystotele telleth/
þat yif þat men hadden eyen of a beast þat hyhte lynx/ /so þat the
lokyng of folk myhte percen thorw the thynges þat with-stöndyn
yt / who so loked thanne in the entrayles of the body of Alcidiades/ 24
þat was ful fayre in superfyte with-owte / it sholde seme ryht fowl/
/And forthy yif thow semyst fayr / thy nature maketh nat þat /
but the deceyuable or the feblesse of the eyen þat loken/ /but preyse
the goodes of þe body as mochel as euer the lyst / So þat thow knowe 28
Algates þat what so it be þat is to seyn of godes of the body/
/whych þat thow wondrest vp on may ben destroyed or dyssolued / by
the hete of a feure of thre dayes/ /Of alle whyche forseyde thinges /
.I. may reducen this shortly in somme/ /that thyse wordly goodes / 32
whyche þat ne mowen nat yeuen þat they be-heten / ne ne ben nat
perfyte by congregasyon of alle goodes / þat they ne ben nat weyes

ne pathes þat bryngen man to blysfulnesse / ne makyn men to ben
 blysful //

¶ The .8.th Metur [*leaf 82, back*]

4 **A** Llas whych folye *and* whych ygnoraunce mys ledeth
 wandrynge wrechches fro the paath of verray goode/
 /Certes ye ne seken no gold in grene trees/ /ne ye ne
 gaderen nat presyos stones / in the vynes / ne ye ne
 hyden nat yowre gynnes in the hye Mountaynes to kachche fyssh /
 8 of whyche ye may maken Ryches festes/ /And yif yow lyketh to
 honte to Rooes / ye ne gon nat to the foordes of the water / þat
 hyhte tyrene/ /And ouer this men knowen wel the brykes *and* the
 cauernes of the see .I.-hyd in floodes // *and* knowen ek whych water
 12 ys ¹most plentyuos of whyte perles / *and* knowen whych water
 habowndeth most of Rede purple / þat is to seyn of a manere shelle
 fysh / *with* whych men dyen purple // *and* knowen whych strondes
 habownden most *with* tendre fysshes or of sharpe fysshes that
 16 hyhten Echynnys / but folk suffren hem self to ben so blynde / þat
 hem ne rechcheth nat to knowe weere thilke godes ben .I.-hydd/
 /whyche þat they coueyten/ /but plowngen hem in Erthe *and* seken
 there thylke good þat sormounteþ þe heuene þat bereth the sterres/
 20 /what preyere may .I. maken þat be digne to the nice thowhtes of
 men/ /but .I. preye þat they coueyten Rychesse *and* honours / so
 þat whan they han geten tho false goodes *with* gret travayle / þat
 ther-by they mowe knowen the verray Goodes

¶ The 9th prose [*leaf 85, back, margin*]

24 **I** T suffiseth þat .I. haue shewyd hyder to // the forme of false
 welefulnesse/ /so þat yif thow loke now clerly / the ordyr
 of myn enteneyon requireth / ffrom hennes forth to shewen
 the þe verray welefulnesse/ /ffor sothe *quod* .I. / I. se wel
 28 now þat suffysaunce may nat comen by Rychesses / ne power by
 Reames / ne Reuerence by dignitees / ne gentyllesse by glorye /
 ne Ioye by / delyces / *and* hasthow wel knowen þe causes *quod* she
 why it is/ /Certes me semeth *quod* .I. þat .I. se hem ryht as thowgh

it were thorw a lytel klyfte / but me weere leuere knowen hem
 more opynly of the/ /Certes quod she the resoun is al redy // ffor
 thylke thing þat symply is o thing / with-owten any deusyow //
 The errour and folye of mankynde / departeth and deuydeth it and 4
 mys-ledeth it and transporteth from verray and parfyt good / to
 goodes þat ben false and vnparfyt // but sey me this // wenesthow þat
 he þat hat nede of power / y^t hym ne lacketh no thing/ /nay quod
 .I. // Certes quod she thow seyst a ryht/ /ffor yif so be þat ther ys 8
 a thing / þat in any partye be feblere of power certes as in þat it
 mot nedes ben nedy of foreyne help/ /Ryht so is it quod .I. /
 Suffysaunce and power ben thanne of o kynde/ /so semeth it quod
 .I. / And demesthow quod she / þat a thing þat is of this manere / 12
 þat is to seyn suffysaunt and myhty / owhte ben despyced ¹Or elles
 þat it be ryht digne of Reuerence / abouen alle thinges / Certes quod
 .I. it nis no dowte / þat it is ryht worthy to ben reuerenced/ /Lat vs
 quod she adden thanne reuerence to suffysaunce and to power / so 16
 þat we demen þat thise thre thinges be al o thing // Certes quod .I.
 lat vs adden it / yif we wolen graunten the sothe/ /what demesthow
 thanne quod she // is þat a dyrk thing / and nat noble þat is suffisaunt
 reuerent and myhty / Or elles þat it is ryht noble / and ryht cler by 20
 celebryte of renon/ /Considere thanne quod she as we han graunted
 her-by-form / þat he þat ne hath nede of no thing / and is most
 myhty and most digne of honour yif hym nedith any clernesse of
 renoun / whych clernesse he myhte nat graunten of hym self // So 24
 þat for lacke of thylke clernesse / he myhte seme the febelere on any
 side / or the more owt cast // Glose / this to seyn nay / ffor who so
 þat is suffysaunt myhty and reuerent / clernesse of renoun folweth
 of the forseyde thinges / he hath it al redy of hys suffysaunce // boece 28
 .I. may nat quod .I. / denye it / but I mot graunte as it is / þat this
 thing be ryht celebrable/ /by clernesse of renon and noblesse /
 thanne folwyth it quod she / þat we adden clernesse of renon to the
 thre forseyde thinges so þat ther ne be amonges hem no difference/ 32
 /this a consequens quod .I./ /this thing thanne quod she / þat ne hat
 nede of no foreyne thing / and þat may don alle thinges by hyse

¹ leaf 86.

strengthes / and þat is noble and honorable // nis nat that a mery
 thing and a Ioyful/ /boece // but whennes quod .I. þat any sorwe
 myhte comyn / to this thing þat is swyche // Certes .I. may nat
 4 thinke Philosophie/ /than moten we graunte quod se that this thing /
 be ful of gladnesse / yif the forseide thinges ben sothe/ /and
 certes also mote we graunten þat suffysaunce / power / noblesse /
 Reuerence / and gladnesse ben only diuerse by names but hyr
 8 substaunce hath no diuersite // boece // it mot nedly ben so quod .I.
 // Philosophie/ /thilke thing thanne quod she / þat is oon and
 symple in hys nature / the wykkesse of men departeth yt and
 deuydeth it // and whan they enforcen hem to geten partye of a
 12 thing / þat ne hath no part / they ne geten hem neyther thilke
 partye þat nis non // ne the thing all hool that¹ they ne desyre nat/
 /boece // in whych manere quod .I. P[hilosophie] thilke man quod she
 þat secheth Rychesches to fien pouerte / he ne trauayleth hym nat for
 16 to gete power ffor he hath leuere ben dyrk and vyl // and ek with-
 draweth from hym self many naturel delices // ffor he nolde lese the
 moneye þat he hath asemblyd / but certes in this manere / he ne
 geteth hym nat suffisaunce / þat power forleteth / and þat moleste
 20 prykketh // and þat fylthe maketh owt cast / and þat dyrkenesse
 hydeth // and certes he þat desireth oonly power / he wasteth and
 schatereth rychesse / and despyseth delyc² / and ek honour þat is
 with-owte power / ne he ne preyseth glorie no thing // Certes thus
 24 seesthow wel þat manye thinges faylen to hym // ffor he hath som
 tyme defaute of many necessarytes/ /and many angwyssos byten
 hym // and whan he ne may nat don tho defautes a wey / he ffor-
 letith to ben myhty / and þat is the thing þat he most desyreth //
 28 and ryht thus may .I. maken semlable resouns of honours / and of
 glorie / and of delic² / ffor so as euery of thyse forseide thinges is
 the same that thise oother thinges ben / þat is to seyn al oon thing //
 who so þat euer sekith to geten þat oon of thise / and nat þat
 32 oothre // he ne gete[t]h nat þat he desireth // boece // what seysthow
 thanne / yif þat a man coueyteth to geten alle thise thinges to
 gydere // P // Certes quod she .I. wolde seye þat he wolde geten

¹ leaf 86, back.² delycus, delicus.

hym souereyn blysfulnesse/ /but þat shal he nat fynde in tho
 thinges þat .I. haue shewyd / þat ne mowen nat yeuen þat they be-
 hoten // boece/ /Certes no quod .I. // thanne quod she / ne sholden
 men nat / by no wey seken blysfulnesse in swyche thinges as men 4
 wene þat they ne mowen yeuen but o thing senglely of alle þat men
 seken // B. / I. graunte wel quod .I. ne no sothere thing ne may ben
 sayd/ /P.// now hasthow thanne quod she / the forme *and* the causes
 of false welefulnesse/ /now torne *and* flitte the eyen of thy thowght / 8
 ffor there shalthow sen a-non thilke verray blysfulnesse / þat .I.
 haue by-hyht the // boece/ /Certes quod .I. it is cler *and* opyn thowh
 it were to a blynde man/ /*and* þat shewedest thow me ful wel a lytel
 here by-form // whan thow enforcedest the to shewe me the causes of 12
¹the false blysfulnesse/ /ffor but yif I be bygyld thanne is thilke the
 verray blysfulnesse parfyt./ þat parfytly maketh a man / suffisaunt /
 myhty / honourable / noble / *and* ful of gladnesse // *and* for thow
 shalt wel knowe / þat .I. haue wel vnderstonden thyse thinges with- 16
 in my herte/ /.I. knowe wel þat thilke blysfulnesse / þat may
 verrayly yeuen oon of the forseide thinges syn they ben al oon / .I.
 knowe dowteles þat thilke thing is the fulle blysfulnesse/ /P // O
 my norye quod she / by this opynion / .I. seye þat thow art blysfyl / 20
 yif thow putte this ther-to / þat .I. shal seyn/ /what is that quod
 .I. // trowesthow þat ther be any thing in thise erthely mortal towm-
 blynge thinges / þat may bryngen this estat/ /Certes quod .I. I
 trowe it nawht/ /*and* thow hast shewed me wel þat ouer thilke 24
 good ther nis no thing more to ben desired / P/ /Thise thinges
 thanne quod she / þat is to sey Erthely suffisaunce / *and* power /
and swyche thinges / eyther they semen lyckenesses of verray good/
 / Or elles it semith that they yeue to mortal foolk a manere of 28
 goodes / that ne ben nat parfyt // but thilke good þat is verray *and*
 parfyt / þat may they nat yeuen/ /Boece/ /I acorde me wel quod
 .I. // p/ /thanne quod she for as mochel as thow hast knowen /
 which is thilke verray blysfulnesse/ /*and* ek whyche thilke thinges 32
 ben / þat lyen falsly blysfulnesse / þat is to seyn þat by deceite
 semen verrey goodes // now by-houeth the to knowe whennes *and*

ablynge hem heye by lyhte cartes/ /thow sowest ham in to heuene
 and in to Erthe / and whan they ben conuerted ¹To the by thy
 bygynnyng lawe / thow makest hem retorne ayein to the by
 ayein ledyng fyr // O fadyr yiue thow to the thowht² / to styen vp in ⁴
 to the streyte sete³ / and graunte hym to enuerowne the welle of
 good // and the lyht yfownde / graunte hym to fyche the clere
 syhtes of hys corage in the / and skatere thow and to-breke thow
 the weyhtes and the clowdes of erthely heuynesse // And shyne ⁸
 thow by thy bryhtnesse / ffor thow art clernesse / pou art peysyble reste
 to debonayre folkes // thow thy self art by-gynnyng / berere / ledere /
 paath and terme / to loke on the that is owre ende //

¶ The 10th prose [Leaf 91, back]

FOr as moche thanne as thow hast seyn / which is the forme ¹²
 of good þat nis nat parfyt / and whych is the forme of good
 þat is parfyt / now trowe .I. þat it were good / to shewe in
 what⁴ this perfeccyon of blysfulnesse is set / and in this
 thing .I. trowe þat we sholden fyrst enquire for to wyten / yif þat ¹⁶
 any swyche manere good as thilke good that thow hast dyffynysed
 a lytel heere by-forn / þat is to seyn souereyn good / may ben
 fownde in the nature of thinges // ffor that veyn ymagynacyon of
 thowght / ne deceyue vs nat / and putte vs owte ²⁰
 Of the sothfastnesse /
 of thilke thing þat is svmmytted to us / but it may nat ben
 denoyed / þat thilke good ne is / and þat it nis ryht as welle⁵ of alle
 goodes / ffor alle thing þat is clepyd inparfyt / is proeued inparfyt /
 by the amenusyng of perfeccion⁷ or of thing þat is parfyt // and ²⁴
 ther-of comht it / þat in euery thing general / yif that men sen any
 thing / þat is inparfyt / Certes in thilke general ther mot ben som
 thing þat is parfyt / ffor yif so be þat perfeccyon is don a-vey
 men may nat thinke / ne seye fro whennes thilke thing is þat is ²⁸
 clepyd inparfyt / ffor the nature of thinges ne took not hyr
 bygynnyng of thinges amenused and inparfyt / But it procedeth
 of thinges þat ben al hoole and absolut⁸ // and dessendeth so

¹ leaf 88, back.

² gloss: .s. boecii.

³ gloss: .i. summe bone.

⁴ gloss: 'que nam': Latin prose, lf. 88, bk, 'quo nam.'

⁵ leaf 92.

⁶ gloss: .i. deus.

⁷ gloss: .i. perfecti.

⁸ gloss: .i. laws.

down in to owtterest thinges / and in to thinges empty and with-
owten frut/ /but as .I. haue Ishewyd a lytul her byform / þat yif
ther be a blysfulnesse þat be freele and veyn and inparfyt // ther
4 may no man dowte that ther nis som blysfulnesse / þat is sad.
stydefast and parfyt/ /b./ /this is concluded quod .I. fermely and
sothfastly // p // but considere also quod she in wham this blysful-
nesse enhabyteth/ /the comune acordaunce and conseite of the
8 corages of men proeueth and graunteth / þat God prynce of alle
thinges is good/ /ffor so as nothing ne may ben thowht bettre than
god / It may nat ben dowed thanne / þat he þat nothing nis bettre /
þat he nis good/ /Certes reson sheweth þat God is so good / þat it
12 proueth by verray force þat parfyt good is in hym // ffor yif God
ne is swych he ne may nat ben prinse of alle thinges / for certes som
thing possessyng in itself parfyt good / sholde be more worthy than
god/ /and it sholde semen that thilke thing weere fyrst / and eldere
16 than god // ffor we han shewyd apertly / þat alle thinges þat ben
parfyt ben fyrst or thinges þat ben vnparfyt/ /And for-thy for as
moche as that my resoun / or my processes ne go nat a-wey with-owte
an ende // we owen to graunten / þat the souereyn god is ryhtful of
20 souereyn parfyt good/ /And we han establysshed þat the souereyn
good is verray blysfulnesse // thanne mot it nedes be / þat verray
blysfulnesse is set in souereyn God/ /b./ /this take I wel quod I /
ne this ne may nat ben withseid / in no manere/ /but .I. preyre
24 quod she / see now how þou mayst proeuen holyly and with-owte
coruption this þat I. haue seyde / þat the souereyn God is ryhtful
of souereyn good // In whych manere quod I./ /Wenesthow awht
quod she / þat this prynce of alle thinges haue .I.-take thilke souereyn
28 good any wher owt of hym self/ /Of whych souereyn good men
proueth þat he is ful / ryht as thow myttest / thinken / þat God
þat hath blysfulnesse in hym self / and thilke blysfulnesse þat is in
hym / weren diuers in substaunce // ffor yif thow wene þat God haue
32 resseyud thilke good owt of hym self/ /thow mayst wene þat he
þat yaf thiike good to god / be more worthy thanne is god/ /but .I.
am by-knowen and confesse / and þat ryht dignely / that god is ryht

worthy abouen alle thinges/ */and* yif so be þat this good be in hym
by nature // but that is diuers fro hym by wenyng resoun / syn
we speke of God prynce of alle thinges / faigne who so feigne may /
who was he þat hath conioigned these diuerse thinges to-gidere/ */and* 4
ek at the laste / se wel þat a thing þat is diuers from any thing /
that thilke thing nis nat that same thing / ffor whych it is
vndyrstonden to ben diuerse/ /Thanne folweth it / þat thilke
thing þat by hys nature is diuerse fro souereyn good / þat 8
that thing nis nat souereyn good/ /but certes þat weere a felonos
coursednesse to thinken that of hym¹ / þat nothing is more worth ffor
alwey of alle thinges / the nature of hem ne may nat ben better than
his bygynnyng // ffor whych .I. may concluden by ryht verray 12
resoun / þat thilke þat is bygynny[n]g of alle thinges / thilke same
thing is souereyn good in hys substaunce/ /b/ /thow has seyde
ryht-fully *quod* .I. // p. // But we han graunted *quod* she that the
souereyn good is blysfulnesse/ */and* þat is soth *quod* .I./ /Thanne 16
quod she moten we nedes graunten *and* confessen that thilke same
souereyn good be god/ /Certes *quod* I. / I. ne may nat denye ne
withstonde the resouns purposed / *and* .I. se wel þat it folweth by
strengthe of the premysses/ /loke now *quod* she yif this be proued 20
yit more fermely thus / þat ther ne mowen nat ben two souereyn
goodes / þat ben diuerse amonge hem self // ffor certes the goodes
that ben diuerse amonges hem self / þat oon nis nat þat þat othere is/
/ thanne ne mowen neyther ²Of hem ben parfyt / so as eyther of 24
hem lakketh to other/ /but þat þat nis nat parfyt / men may sen
apertly þat it is nat souereyn/ /the thinges thanne that ben
souereynly goode / ne mowen by no wey ben diuerse // but .I. haue
wel concluded / þat blysfulnesse *and* god ben the souereyn good / 28
ffor whyche it mot nedes ben / þat souereyn blysfulnesse is souereyn
diuynyte / nothing *quod* .I. nis more sothfast than this / ne more
ferme by resoun / ne a more worthy thing than god may nat ben
concluded/ /p./ /vp on thise thinges thanne *quod* she / Ryht as 32
thyse geometryens whan they han shewyd hyr proposiciouns ben
wont to bryngen in thinges / þat they clepyen porysmes / or decla-

¹ gloss : deo.² leaf 93.

- racious of forseyde thinges/ /Ryht so wole .I. yeue the heere as a
 corolarye / or a mede of coroune ffor why for as moche as by the
 getyng of blysfulnesse men ben makid blysful / *and* blysfulnesse is
 4 diuinite/ /thanne is it manyfest *and* opyn / *pat* by the getyng of
 diuynite / men ben makid blysful / Ryht as by the getyng of
 Iustyce / *and* by the getyng of sapience they ben makid wyse //
 Ryht so nedes by the semblable resoun / whan they han getyn
 8 deuynte / they ben makid goddes/ /thanne is euery blysful man
 god // but certes by nature ther nis but o god / but by thy partysy-
 pasion of deuynte / ther ne let ne desturbyth nothing that ther ne
 ben many goddes // This is *quod* .I. a fayr thing *and* precios / clepe
 12 it as thow wolt / be it porisme or corellarye/ /Or meede of corowne /
 or declarynges/ /Certes *quod* she nothyng nis fayrere than is the
 thing *pat* by resoun sholde ben added to thyse forseyde thinges/
 /what thing' *quod* .I. / so *quod* she as it semeth that blysfulnesse
 16 contenyth many thinges / it were for to whyten wheyther *pat* alle
 this thinges maken or conioignen as a manere body of blysfulnesse /
 be diuersite of partyes or of menbrys/ /Or elles yif any of alle
 thilke thinges be swych / *pat* it acomplyse by hym self the
 20 substaunce of blysfulnesse / so that alle thise oothre thinges ben
 referred *and* browht to blysfulnesse / that is to seyn as to the chief
 of hem/ /*I.* wolde *quod* .I. that thow makedest me clerly to vndyr-
 stonde what thow ¹seyst / *and* *pat* thow recordedyst me the forseyde
 24 thinges // haue .I. nat Iuged *quod* she / *pat* blysfulnesse is good / ys
 forsothe *quod* .I. *and* *pat* souereyn good/ /Adde thanne *quod* she
 thilke good *pat* is makid blysfulnesse to alle the forseyde thinges /
 ffor thilke same blysfulnesse *pat* is demed to ben souereyn suffisaunce /
 28 thilke selue is souereyn power / souereyn reuerence / souereyn clernesse
 or noblesse / *and* souereyn delit / .Conclusio. / what seyst þou thanne of
 alle thinges / *pat* is to seyn / suffyssaunce / power / *and* thise oothre
 thinges / ben they thanne as menbrys of blysfulnesse / or ben they
 32 referred *and* browht to souereyn good / ryht as alle thinges *pat* ben
 browht to the chief of hem/ /B // .I. vndyrstonde wel *quod*
 .I. / what thow purposest to seke / but .I. desire for to herkne

¹ leaf 93, back.

þat thow shewe it me / p //tak now thus the descression of this
questyoun *quod* / she // yif alle thise thinges *quod* she weeren
menbrys to felicite / than weeren they diuerse þat oon from that
oother / *and* swwhyh is the nature of partyes / or of menbris that 4
diuerse menbrys compownen a body/ /*Certes quod* .I. it hath wel
ben shewyd heere by-form / þat alle thise thinges ben alle o thing /
thanne ben they none menbrys *quod* she // ffor elles it sholde seme
þat blysfulnesse weere conioined / al of on menbre allone/ /but þat is 8
a thing þat may nat be don/ /this thing *quod* .I. nis nat doughtous /
but .I. abyde to herknen the remnaunt of thy questyon/ /this is
opyn *and* cler *quod* she / þat alle oothre thinges ben referred *and*
browht to good // ffor the[r]fore is suffisaunce requeryd / for it is 12
demyd to ben good/ /*and* forthy is power required / ffor men trowen
also / þat it be good // *and* this same thing mowen we thinken *and*
coniecten / of Reuerence *and* of noblesse / *and* of delit/ /thanne is
souereyn good the somme / *and* the cause of al þat awht ben desyred/ 16
/ ffor why thilke thing þat wyth-holdeth no good in it-self / ne
semblaunce of good / it ne may nat wel in no manere be desired ne
required // *and* the contrarye/ /ffor thogh that thinges by hyr
nature / ne ben nat goode/ /Algates yif men wene þat they ben 20
goode / yit ben they desyred as thowgh þat they weeren verraylyche
Goode // *and* therfor is it þat men owhten to wene byryht / þat
bounte be the souereyn fyn / *and* the cause of alle the thinges þat
ben to requeren/ /but certes thilke þat is cause / for whych men 24
requeren any thing / it semeth þat thilke same thing be most
desyred / as thus yif þat a wyht wolde ryden for cause of hele / he
ne desyreth nat so mochel the moeuyng to Rydin / as the effect of
hys hele / now thanne syn þat alle thinges ben required for the grace 28
of good / they ne ben nat desyred of alle folk moore thanne the
same good // but we han graunted þat blysfulnesse is that thing /
for whyche þat alle thyse oothre thinges ben desyred / thanne is it
thus that certes oonly blysfulnesse is required *and* desired / by 32
whyche thing it sheweth clerly / that of good *and* of blysfulnesse / is
al oon *and* the same substaunce/ /.I. se nat *quod* .I. wherfore þat

men myhten discorden in this // And we han shewyd þat god *and*
 verray blysfulnesse / is al oo thing/ /that is soth quod .I. thanne
 mowen we conclude sikerly / þat the substaunce of God¹ is set in thilke
 4 same good *and* in non oother place./

¶ The 10th Metur [*Leaf 94, back, margin*]

O Comyth alle to-gydere now / ye þat ben .I.-cawht² *and*
 ybownde with wyckyde cheynes // by the deceyuable delyt
 of Erthely thinges enhabytynge in yowre thowht/ /he
 8 shal ben the reste of yowre labours // her ys the hauene²
 stable in peysyble quiete/ /this allone is the opyn refut³ to wrechches //
 Glosa. This to seyn þat ye þat ben combyrd *and* desseyuyd / with
 worldely affeccyouns / comyth now to this souereyn good / þat is god /
 12 þat is refut³ to hem þat wolen comyn to hym / *textus* alle the thinges
 that the Ryuer tagus yeueth yow / with hys goldene grauayles/ /Or elles
 alle the thinges / þat the Ryuer herynus y[e]ueth with his rede brynke/
 /Or that Indus yeueth þat is next the hote party of the world / þat
 16 medleth the grene stones³ with the whyte⁴ / ne sholde nat cleeren the
 lookynge of yowre thowht/ but hyden rather yowre blynde corages /
 with-in hyr dyrknesse/ /Al that lyketh yow heere *and* exciteth *and*
 moeueth yowre thowhtes / the erthe hath norysshed it in hyse lowe
 20 caues/ /but the shynnyng by whyche the heuene is gouerned / *and*
 whennes he hath hys strengthe // that eschueth the dyrke ouerthrow-
 ynge of the sowle/ /*and* who so may knowyn thilke lyht of blysful-
 nesse / he shal wel seyn / þat the whyte beemes of the sonne ne ben
 24 nat cleer //

¶ The .1.1. prose [*Leaf 98, margin*]

B Oece // I assente me quod .I. / ffor alle thise thinges ben
 strongly bownden with ryht ferme resouns/ /How mochel
 28 wyllthow. preysyn it quod she / yif þat thow knowe what
 thilke good is/ /I wol preyse it quod .I. / by preys / with-
 owten ende / yif it shal be-tydde me to knowe also to-gydere / god /
 þat is good/ /Certes quod she shal .I. do the / by verray resouns/

¹ gloss : i. dei.

³ gloss : i. smaragdes.

² gloss : i. portus.

⁴ gloss : i. Margaretes.

/yif that tho thinges þat I haue concluded / a litel her byforn / dwellen
oonly in hyr fyrst graunting¹ // Boece // they dwellen graunted to the
quod .I./ /this is to seyn as who seyth / .I. graunte thy forseide
conclusiouns / haue .I. nat shewyd the quod she / þat the thinges þat 4
ben requered of many folkes ne ben nat verray goodes / ne parfyte /
for they ben diuerse þat oon fro þat oothre // and so as ech of hem
is lackynge to other / they ne han no power to bryngen a good / þat
is ful and absolut/ /but thanne at erste / ben they verray good / 8
whan they ben gaderid to gidere / alle in to O forme / and in on
wyrkyng / so þat thilke thinge þat is suffisaunce / thilke same be
power / and reuerence / and noblesse / and myrthe / and forsothe
but yif alle thyse thinges / ben alle oon same thing¹ they ne han nat 12
wherby / þat they mowen ben put in the nowmbyr of thinges þat
owhten ben requered or desyred/ /boece // it is shewyd quod .I. /
ne her of may no man dowten / p/ /the thinges thanne quod she
þat ne ben no Goodes / whanne they ben diuerse / and whan ¹they 16
bygynnyn to ben alle oon thing / thanne ben they goodes / ne comth
it¹ hem nat thanne by the getyng of vnite / that they ben makid
goodes/ /B./ /So it semyth quod .I./ /but alle thing þat is good quod
she grauntisthow þat it be good by the participacioun of good / or no/ 20
/ .I. graunte it quod I // thanne mosthow graunten quod she / by
semblable resoun þat oon and good be oo same thing/ /ffor of thinges
of whyche þat the effect nis nat naturely diuerse / nedes the sub-
staunce mot be oo same thinge/ /I ne may nat denye þat quod .I. // 24
hasthow nat knowen wel quod she / þat alle thing þat is/ /hath so
longe his dwellynge and his substaunce / as longe as it is oon/ /but
whan it forleyth to ben oon / yt mot nedes dyen and corumpe to
gydere // in which manere quod I. / ryht as in bestys quod she whan 28
the sowle and the body ben conioigne in oon and dwellyn togydyre /
it is clepyd a beest/ /and whan hyr vnite is destroyed / by the
desseueraunce þat oon from þat oother / thanne sheweth it wel / þat
it is a ded thing / and þat it nis no lengere no beest // and þ^e body of 32
a whyht whil it dwelleth in oo forme by coniunceyoun of menbrys /
it is wel seyn / þat it is a fygure of man kynde/ /and yif the partyes

¹ leaf 98, back.

of the body ben so deuydyd / *and disseueryd* / *pat* oon fro *pat* oother /
pat they destroyen vnite / the body forletyth to ben *pat* it is was
byforn / *and* who wolde renne in the same manere by alle thinges he
4 sholde seen *pat* *with-owte* dowte euery thing is in his substaunce / as
longe as it is oon / *and* whan it forletith to ben oon / it dieth *and*
periseth / Boece // whan .I. consydere *quod* .I. manye thinges / .I. se
non oother / *is* ther any thing thanne *quod* she *pat* in as moche as it
8 lyuyth naturelly / *pat* forletyth the talent or appetyt of his beyng /
and desireth to come to deth *and* to corupeion / *yif* .I. consydere
quod I the beestes *pat* han any manere nature / of wyllynge *and*
of nyllynge // I. ne fynde no beast / but *yif* it ben constreynyd fro
12 *with* owte forth / *pat* forletith or despiseth the entensyon to lyuen
and to duren or *pat* wole his thanks / hasten hym to dyen ¹ffor
euery beest / *trauaylith* hym to deffende *and* kepe the sauacion of
hys lyf / *eschueth* deth *and* destrucioun / /B // but Certes I dowte
16 me of herbes *and* of trees / *pat* is to seyn *pat* I am in a dowte of
swiche thinges as herbes or trees / *pat* ne han no feelynge sowles / ne
no naturel wyrkynges seruynge to appetites / as bestis han wheither
thei han apetid to dwellen *and* to duren / /Certes *quod* she ne ther-of
20 thar the nat dowte // now loke vp on thise herbys *and* thise trees
they waxen fyrst in swyche places as ben couenable to hem / in
whyche places they ne mowen nat sone dyen / ne dryen / as longe as
hyr nature may deffenden hem / *ffor* som of hem waxen in feeldes /
24 *and* som in Mountaignes / *and* oothre waxen in marys / *and* oothre
cleunyn on Roches / *and* soume waxen plentyuous in sondes / *and* *yif* *pat*
any wyht enforce hym to beryn hem in to oother places / they waxen
drye // *ffor* nature yeueth to euery thing *pat* / *pat* is conuenient to hym
28 *and* *trauaylith* *pat* they ne dye nat² as longe as they han power to
dwellyn *and* to lyuen / *what* woltow seyn of this / *pat* they drawen
alle hyr norysshynge by hyr rootes / ryht as they haddyn hyr
Mowthes I. plounged *with-in* the erthes / *and* shedyn by hyr maryes²
32 hyr wode *and* hyr bark / *and* *what* woltow seyn of this *pat* thilke
thing / *pat* is ryht softe as the marye is / *pat* is alwey hidd in the feete
al *with-inne* *and* *pat* is is defendid fro *with-owte* by the stidefastnesse

¹ leaf 99.² gloss : .i. medulle.

of wode // *and* þat the vttereste bark is put ayenis destemprance of
the heuene / as a defendowr myhty to suffren harm/ /*and* thus certes
maystow wel sen / how gret is the diligence of nature / ffor alle
things renouelen *and* pupplisen hem with seed .I.-multiplied / ne ther 4
nis no man þat ne wot wel þat they ne ben ryht as a foundement *and*
edyfice for to duren / nat only for a tyme / but ryht as for to duren
perdurably by generacyon // *and* the thinges ek þat men wenen ne
hauen none sowles / ne desire they nat ech of hem by sem¹blable 8
reson to kepyn þat that is hirs / þat is to seyn þat is acordynge to hyr
nature in conseruacion of hyr beynge *and* endurynge/ /ffor wher-for
elles berith Lythnesse the flaumbes vp / *and* the weyhte presseth the
erthe a doun/ /but ffor as moche as thilke places *and* thilke moeuynge 12
ben couenable to euerich of hem/ /*and* forsothe euery thing kepith
thilke þat is acordynge *and* propre to hym // ryht as thinges þat ben
contraryes *and* enemys corompen hem/ /*and* yit the harde thinges as
stoones clyuen *and* holden hyr partyes to-gydere ryht faste *and* harde / 16
and deffenden hem in withstondenge þat they ne departe nat lyhtly
a twyne // *and* the thinges þat ben softe *and* fletynge as is water *and*
Eyr they departyn lyhtly / *and* yeuen place to hem þat brekyn or
deuyden hem/ /but natheles they retornen sone ayein in to the same 20
thinges fro whennes they ben arraced // but fyr *and* refuseth alle
deuysyon / ne I. ne trete nat heere now of weleful moeuynge of
the sowle þat is knowynge/ /but of the naturel entencion of thinges/
/As thus ryht as we swolwe the mete þat we resseyuen *and* ne 24
thinke nat on it / *and* as we drawen owre breth in slepynge þat we
wite it nat whil we slepyt / ffor certes in the beestys the loue of hyr
lyuynge ne of hyr beeinges ne comth nat of the wilnynges of the
sowle // but of the bygynnynge of nature/ /ffor certes thorw con- 28
streynynge causes / wil desireth *and* embraceth ful ofte tyme / the
deth þat nature dredith/ /that is to seyn as thus that a man may
ben constreynyd so by som cause that his wil desireth *and* taketh
the deth which þat nature hateth *and* dredeth ful sore/ /And som 32
tyme we seeth the contrarye / as thus that the wil of a wight / des-
torbeth *and* constreyneth þat þat nature desireth / *and* requereth al

¹ leaf 99, back.

wey/ /that is to sein the werk of generacion/ by the whiche
 generacion only / dwelleth *and* is sustenyd the longe durablete of
 mortal ¹things/ /And thus this charite and this Loue *pat* euery
 4 thing hath to hym self ne comth nat of the moeuynge of the sowle /
 but of the entencion of nature/ /ffor the puruyance of god hat
 yeuen to thinges *pat* ben creat of hym / this *pat* is a ful gret cause /
 to lyuen *and* to duren / for which they desiren naturally hyr lyf as
 8 longe as euer they mowen/ /ffor wych thow maist nat drede by no
 manere / that alle the thinges / that ben anywhere / that they ne
 requeren naturally / the ferme stablenesse of perdurable dwellynge /
 and ek the eschuyng of destruccyon/ /B // now confesse I. wel
 12 *quod* .I. that I. see wel now certeynly / with owte dowtes / the
 thinges that whylom semeden vncerteyn to me / P. / /but *quod*
 she thilke thyng *pat* desireth to be *and* to dwellyn perdurablely / he
 desireth to ben oon/ /ffor yif *pat* that oon weere destroyed/ /certes
 16 beinge ne shulde ther non dwellyn to no wiht // that is soth *quod*
 I. / /Thanne *quod* she desirin alle thinges oon/ / .I. assente *quod* .I.
and I haue shewyd *quod* she that thilke same oon is thilke that is
 good // B // ye for sothe *quod* I. // Alle thinges thanne *quod* she
 20 requyren good/ /And thilke good thanne maist descryuen ryht thus/
 / Good is thilke thing *pat* euery wyht desireth/ /Ther ne may be
 thowht *quod* .I. no moore verray thing / for either alle thinges ben
 referred *and* browht to nowht / *and* floteryn with owte gouernour
 24 despoiled of oon / as of hir propre heued / or elles yif ther be any
 thinge / to which *pat* alle thinges tenden *and* hyen / that thing
 moste ben the souereyn good of alle goodes / P/. thanne seyde she
 thus/ /O my nory *quod* she I haue gret gladnesse of the/ /ffor thow
 28 hast fitched in thin herte the myddel sothfastnesse // that is to
 seyn the prykke/ /but this thing hath ben descouered to the / in
 that thow seydyt *pat* thow wystem nat a lytel her by forn // what
 was that *quod* I. / /That thow ne wystem nat *quod* she whych was
 32 the ende of thinges // ¹and Certes that is the thing *pat* euery wiht
 desireth/ /and for as mochel as we han gaderid / *and* comprehendyd
 that good is thilke thing that is desired of alle / thanne moten we
 nedes confessun / that good is the fyn of alle thinges /

¶ The .1.1. Metur [Leaf 100, back, margin]

WHo so that sekith soth by a deep thoght And coueyteth
 nat to ben deseyuyd by no mys weyes // lat hym rollen
and trenden *with-inne* hym'self / the Lyht of his
 inward syhte/ /And lat hym gadere ayein enclynyng 4
 in to a compas the longe moeuynge of hys thowhtes / And lat hym
 techen his corage that he hath enclosed *and* hyd / in his tresors / al
 þat he compaseth or sekith fro *with* owte / /And thanne thilke thing
 that the blake cloude of errour whilom hadde y-couered shal lyhten 8
 more clerly thanne phebe; hym self ne shyneth/ /Glosa/ /Who so
 wole seken the dep grounde / of soth in his thowht / *and* wol nat be
 deceyuyd by false proposiciouns / that goon amys fro the trouthe //
 lat hym wel examine / *and* rolle *with-inne* hym self the nature *and* 12
 the propretes of the thing/ /and lat hym yit eft sones examine *and*
 rollen his thowhtes by good deliberacion or that he deme // and lat
 hym techen his sowle that it hat by naturel pryncyplis / kyndeliche
 y-hyd *with-in* it self alle the trowthe the whiche he ymagynith to ben 16
 in thinges *with-owte* // And thanne alle the dyrknesse of his mys-
 knowynge shal seen more euydently to syhte of his vnderstondynge
 thanne the sonne ne semyth to syhte *with* owte forth / ffor certes the
 body bryngynge the weyhte of foryetyng / ne hath nat chasyd owt 20
 of yowre thowhte al the clernesse of yowre knowynge / ffor certeynly
 the seed of sooth haldith *and* clyueth *with-in* yowre corage *and* it is
 a-waked *and* excited by the wynde *and* by the blastes of doctryne/
 /ffor wherefor elles demen ye of yowre owne wyl the ryhtes whan ye 24
 ben axed // but yif so were þat the noryssynges of reson ne lyuede
 .I.-plowngyd in the depthe of yowre herte/ /this is to seyn how
 sholden men demen þe sooth of any thing þat weere axed / yif ther
 neere a Roote of sothfastnesse þat weere yplowngyd *and* hyd in the 28
 nature pryncyplis / the whiche sothfastnesse lyued *with-in* the dep-
 nesse of the thowght/ *and* yif so be þat the Muse *and* the doctryne
 of plato syngyth sooth // al þat euery whyht lerneth / he ne doth no
 thing elles thanne but recordeth as men recordyn thinges þat ben 32
 foryetyn

¶ The .1.2. prose [Leaf 104, margin]

THanne seide I thus/ /I acorde me gretly to plato / for thow
remenbrist *and* recordist me thise thinges / yit the secounde
tyme / *pat* is to seyn / fyrst whan I loste my memorye / by
4 the contagys coniuncsion of the body with the sowle/ *and*
eft sones afterward / whan I loste it confowndyd by the charge *and*
by the burdene of my sorwe // And thanne seide she thus / yif thow
looke *quod* she fyrst / the thinges *pat* thow hast grauntyd / it ne
8 shal nat ben ryht fer / *pat* thow ne shalt remenbryn thilke thing *pat*
thow seydyt *pat* thow nystyst nat/ /what thing *quod* I/ /by which
gouernement *quod* she *pat* this wordyl ys gouerned // me remenbryth
it wel *quod* .I. / *and* I confesse wel *pat* I ne wiste it nawght/ /but
12 al be it so *pat* .I. se now from a-fer what thow purposest/ /Algates
.I. desire yit to herkene it of the more pleynty/ /thow ne wendist
nat *quod* she / a litel her by-forn *pat* men sholden dowte / *pat* this
world nis gouerned ¹by God/ /Certes *quod* I / ne yit ne dowte I it
16 nawht // ne .I. nel neuer wene *pat* it were to dowte / as who seith /
but I wot wel *pat* god gouerneth this world / *and* I shal shortly
answeren the / by what resouns I am browht to this/ /this world
quod I of so manye diuerse *and* contrarios parties / ne myhte neuer
20 han ben assemblyd in o forme/ /but yif ther nere² oon *pat* con-
ioignede so manye diuerse thinges/ *and* the same diuersite of hir
natures *pat* so discordyn *pat* oon fro *pat* oother / moste departen /
and vn-Ioignen the thinges *pat* ben conioigned // yif ther ne weere
24 oon *pat* contenede / *pat* he hath conioyned *and* I-bownde/ /ne the
certeyn ordre of nature / ne sholde nat brynge forth so ordene
moeuynge / by places / by tymes / by dooinges / by splaces / by
qualites // yif ther ne weere oon *pat* weere ay stidefast dwellynge /
28 *pat* ordeynede & disponede thise diuersitees of moeuynge / & thilke
thing what so euer it be / by which *pat* alle thinges be maked *and*
I-ladd/ /.I. clepe hym god / *pat* is a word *pat* is vsed to alle foolk/
/thanne seyde she / syn thow feelyst thus thise thinges *quod* she/ /I
32 trowe *pat* I haue litel moore to done *pat* thow myhty of welefulnesse /
hool *and* sounde / ne see eft sones thy contre/ /but lat vs loken the

¹ leaf 104, back.

² alterd, later, to 'ne were.'

things þat we ha purposed her by-forn/ /haue .I. nat nowmbryd
 and seyð quod she / þat suffisaunce is in blysfulnesse / and we han a-
 cordyd þat god is thilke same blysfulnesse // yis forsothe quod .I. //
 and þat to gouerne this world quod she ne shal he neuer han nede of 4
 non help fro with owte/ /ffor ellis yif he hadde nede of any help /
 he ne sholde nat haue no ful suffisaunce / yis / thus it mot nedes be
 quod .I./ /thanne ordeynyth he by hym self allone alle things quod
 she // that may nat be denoyed quod I./ /And .I. haue shewyd that 8
 god is the same good/ /it remenbryth me wel quod .I./ /thanne
 ordeynith he alle things by thilke good quod she / syn he which
 þat we han a-cordyd to be good /gouernyth alle things by hym self //
 and he is as a keye / and a stiere / by which / þat the ¹edifice of 12
 this world is I-kept stable / and with-owte coroumpynge // I a-
 corde me gretely quod I/ /and .I. aparseyuode a lytul her by-forn /
 þat thow woldyst seye thus / al be it so þat it weere by a thinne
 suspecyon/ /I. trowe it wel quod she / ffor as .I. trowe thow ledyst 16
 now moore ententyfly thyne eyen to loken the verray goodes But
 natles the thing þat I shal telle the yit ne shewith nat lasse to
 looken² // what is þat quod I // so as men trowen quod she / and þat
 ryhtfully / þat god gouernith alle things by the keye of his goodnesse/ 20
 / and alle thise same things as .I. haue tawht the / hasten hem by
 naturel entencyon to comen to good // ther may no man dowten þat
 they ne ben gouerned voluntarily and þat they ne conuertten hem
 of hir owne wil to the wil of hyr ordenoure as they that ben a- 24
 cordynge and enclyninge to hyr gouernoure and hyr kyng³ / it mot
 nedes be so quod .I./ /for the Reaume ne sholde nat semen blysful
 yif ther weere a yok³ of mysdrawynges⁴ in diuerse partyes / ne the
 sauynge of obedient things ne sholde nat be // thanne is ther nothing 28
 quod she þat kepith his nature þat enforcith hym to goon ayein god/
 / no quod I. // and yif þat any thing enforcede hym to with-stonde
 god / myhte it auaylen at the laste a-yenis hym / þat we han graunted
 to ben almyhty by the ryht of blysfulnesse/ /Certes quod I al 32
 owtrelly it ne myhte nat auaylen hem // thanne is ther no thing

¹ leaf 105.² gloss : .i. considerandum.³ gloss : .i. iugum.⁴ gloss : .i. recusancium.

- quod she þat eyther wole or may with-standyn to his souereyn good/
/I. trowe nat quod .I. // thanne is thilke the souereyn good
quod she þat alle thinges gouerneth strongly / and ordeyneth hem
4 softlytely/ /thanne seyde I thus/ /I delite me quod .I. nat oonly in
the endes or in the somme of the¹ resouns þat thou hast concluded
and proeued // but thilke wordes þat thou vuest deliten me mocho
moore/ /so at the laste foolles þat sumtyme renden grete thinges
8 owhten ben ashamyd of hem self // þat is to seyn ²þat we foolles þat
reprehendnen / wikkedly the thinges þat towchen goddes gouernaunce/
/ we owhten ben asshamyd of owre self/ /as .I. þat seyde þat god
refusith oonly þe werkes of men and ne entremetith nat of it // p //
12 thou hast wel herd quod she the fables of the poetes/ /how þe
gyauntz assayleden the heuene with the goddes / but for sothe the
debonayre force of god desposede hem / as it was worthy / þat is to
seyn destroyede the giauntz as it was worthi/ /but wil thou þat we
16 ioignen to-gidere thilke same reasouns // for perauenture of swych
coniuncyon may sterten vp som fair sparkle of soth/ /do quod .I. as
the liste // weenest thou quod she þat God ne be almyhty / no nis in
dowte of it/ /Certes quod .I. no wyht ne dowlth it/ /yif it be in
20 his mynde/ /but he quod she þat is al-myhty / ther nis no thing
þat he ne may/ /þat is soth quod .I./ /May god don yuel quod she/
/nay forsothe quod I // thanne is yuel nothing quod she/ /syn þat he
ne may nat don yuel / þat may don alle thinges // scornesthow thou
24 me quod I / or elles playesthow / or desseyuesthow me / þat hast so
wouen me with thy resouns the hows of dydalus / so entrelaced / þat
it is vn-able to be vn-laced/ /thow þat oother while entrist ther þou
isest / and oother while isest ther thou entrist/ /ne fooldesthow nat
28 to-gydere by replycacion of wordis / a manere wondyrful cercle or enuyr-
onyng of the symplycte deuyne/ /ffor certes a lytel her By-forn /
whan thou by-gunne at blysfulnesse // thou seydist þat it is souereyn
good/ /and seidist / þat it is set in souereyn god/ /and seidist þat god
32 hym self is souereyn good / and þat god is fulle þe blysfulnesse for
which þou yaue me as a couenable yift // þat it is to seyn þat no wyht
nis blysful / but yif he be good also ther-with/ /and seidest ek that

¹ "the" a later insertion?

² leaf 105, back.

the forme of good¹ is the substaunce of god² and of blysfulnesse // and
 seidest þat thilke same oon is thilke same good / þat is requered and
 desired of alle the kynde of thynges / and thow ³proeuedest in dis-
 putynges þat. God gouerneth alle the thinges of þe worlde by the 4
 gouernementz of bowonte and seydyt þat alle thinges / wolen obeyen
 to hym // and seydist þat the nature of yuel nis no thing / and thise
 thinges ne shewedist thow nat / with none resouns I-taken fro with-
 owte / but by proeues in cerclis and hoomlich knowen // the whiche 8
 proeues drawn to hem self hir feith and hyr a-cord euerich of hem
 of oother / thanne seide she thus / I ne scorne the nat / ne pleye /
 ne desseyue the / but I. haue shewyd the / the thing þat is grettyst
 ouer alle thinges by the yift of god / that we whilom preyeden // for 12
 this is the forme of the deuyne substaunce / þat is swich þat it ne
 slydeth nat in to owtterest foreyne thinges / ne ne resseiveth no
 straunge thinges in hym / but ryht as apermanides seide in grec of
 thilke deuyne substaunce / he seide thus / þat thilke deuyne sub- 16
 staunce tornith the world / and the moeuable cercle of thinges //
 whil thilke deuyne substaunce kepith it self / with owte moeuynge /
 þat is to seyn / þat it ne moeueþ neuer mo / and yit it moeueþ alle
 oothre thinges / but natheles yif I haue styred resouns þat ne ben 20
 nat taken / fro with owte þe compas of thing of which we treten /
 but resouns þat ben by-stowed / with in þat compas / ther nis
 nat why þat thow sholdest merueylen / syn thow hast lerned by the
 sentense of plato / þat nedes the wordes moten ben cosynes to þe 24
 thinges of which they spekyn

¶ The .12. Metur [Leaf 107, back, margin]

Blysful is þat man þat may sen the clere welle of good / blysf-
 ful is he þat may vnbyndyn hym fro the bondes of the
 heuy erthe // the poete of trace orpheus þat whilom hadde 28
 ryht gret sorwe for the deth of his wyf / After þat he hadde
 makid by his wepply songes þe wodes moeuable to rennen / and
 hadde makyd the ryueres to stondyn styлле / and hadde makyd the
 hertes & the hyndes to Ioignen dredeles hir sydes to cruwel lyouns / 32
 forto herkennen his songe // and hadde makyd þat the hare was

¹ gloss: .i. boni.

² gloss: .i. dei.

³ leaf 106.

nat agast of the hownde / whiche þat was plesid by his songe //
 So whan the moste ardent loue of his wif / brende the entayles
 of his brest/ /ne the songes þat hadden ouercomen alle thinges
 4 ne myhten nat asswagen hir lord orpheus/ /he pleynde hym of
 the heuene goodes þat weren crwel to hym/ /he wente hym to the
 howses of helle / *and* there he temprede hise blaundyssynge soonges /
 by resownynge strenges *and* spak *and* soonge in wepynge al þat euer
 8 he hadde resseyuyd/ /*and* laued owt of the noble welles of his modyr
 calyope the goddes //*and* he soonge *with* as mochel as myht of
 wepynge / *and with* as moche / as loue þat dowblede his sorwe myhte
 yeue hym *and* thechen hym/ /*and* he commouede the helle *and*
 12 requerede / *and* by-sowhte by swete preyere / the lordes of sowles in
 helle / of relesinge / þat is to seyn to yilden hym his wif/ /Cerberus
 the porter of helle *with* hise thre heuedes was cawht *and* al a-bayst for
 16 the newe songe //*and* the thre goddesses / furijs / *and* vengeressis
 of felonies / þat tormenten *and* agasten the sowles by anoy/ /woxen
 soriful *and* sory *and* wepyn teeres for pite //*tho* ne was nat the
 heued of yxion I-tormented / by the ouerthrowinge wheel/ /*and*
 tatalus þat was destroyed by the woodnesse of longe thirst despisith
 20 the flodes to drynke/ /the fowl þat hihte voltor / þat etith the
 stomak or the gyser of ticius is so fulfyld of his song þat it nil etin
 ne tyren no more / At the laste the lord *and* Iuge of sowles was
 moued to misericordes *and* cryde/ /we ben ouercomen *quod* he / yiue
 24 we to orpheus his wyf to bere hym compaignye / he hath² wel
 I-bowht hir by his song / *and* his ditee / but we wol putte a lawe in
 this / *and* couenaunt in the yifte / þat is to seyn þat³ tyl he be owt
 of helle / yif he looke by-hynde hym / þat his wyf shal comen ayein
 28 vn to vs / but what is he þat may yiue a lawe to loueres/ /loue is a
 gret lawe *and* a strengere to hym self / than any lawe þat men may
 yeuen/ /allas whan orpheus *and* his wyf weren almost at the termis
 of þe nyht/ /þat is to seyn at the laste bowndes of helle/ /Orpheus
 32 lookede abacward on Erudice his wyf *and* loste hir / *and* was ded/
 /this fable apartienyth to yow alle / who so euere desireth or sekith
 to lede his thowht in to the souereyn day / þat is to seyn to clernesse

¹ leaf 108.

² second h later.

³ ? þat later.

of souereyn god / ffor who so þat euere be so ouercomen þat he
fychche hys eyen into the putte of helle / þat is to seyn who so sette
thowhtes in erthely thinges / al þat euere he hath drawn of the noble
good celestial / he lesith it whan he loketh the helles / þat is to seyn 4
in to lowe thinges of erthe /

Explicit liber .3.^{us}

Incipit liber quartus.

The I^a prose [margin, leaf 109]

WHan philosophie hadde songyn softly and delitably
the forseyde thinges / kepyng the dignite of hir
cheere / and the weyhte of hir wordes / .I. thanne 8
þat ne hadde nat al owterly foryetin the wepyng and
the Mowrynge þat was set in Myn herte / ¹fforbrak the entencion
of hir þat entendede yit to seyn some oothre thinges / O quod I thow
art gyderesse of verrey lyht / the thinges þat thow hast seid me / 12
hidir to ben so cleere to me and so shewynge by the deuyne lookynge
of hem / and by the resouns that thei ne mowen nat ben ouercomyn //
and thilke thinges þat þou toldest me / al be it so þat I hadde
whilom foryeten hem / for the sorwe of the wrong þat hath ben don 16
to me / yit natheles thei ne weeren nat al owtrely vnknownen to me //
but this same is namely a ryht gret cause of my sorwe / so as the
gouernoure of thinges is good / yif þat yueles mowen ben by any
weyes / Or elles yif þat yueles passen with owte punyssinge // the 20
whiche thing oonly / how worthi it is to ben wondrid vp on //
thow considerist it wel thy self certeynly / but yit to this thing
ther is yit another thing I-loigned more to be wondryd vp on / ffor
felonye is imperisse and flowrith ful of Rychesses / and vertu nis 24
nat al oonly with-owte meedes / but it is cast vndyr / and fortroden
vndyr the feet of felonos folk / and it abieth the tormentz in
stide of wikkede felonis // of alle whiche thinges / ther nis no
wyht þat may merueylen ynowh / ne compleyne þat swiche thinges 28
ben doon in the regne of god þat alle thinges woot / and alle thinges
may / and ne wole nat but oonly good thinges / thanne seide she

¹ leaf 109, back.

thus/ /*Certes quod* she þat weere a gret meruayle / *and* an enbasshinge
 with-owten ende/ /*and* wel moore horrible than al monstres/ /yif it
 weere as thow weenest/ /þat is to seyn þat in the rith ordenee hows
 4 of so mochel a fader *and* an ordenoure of meyne / þat the vesseles þat
 ben fowle *and* vyl / sholden ben honoured and he heryed/ /*and* the
 presious vesseles sholden ben defowled / *and* vyl / but it is nat so/ /ffor
 yif tho thinges þat .I. haue concluded a lytel her by-forn ben kept
 8 hool *and* vnaced / thow shalt wel knowe by the Autoryte of god / of
 the whos regne I speke / þat certes the goode folk¹ ben alwey myhty /
and shrewes ben alwey owt cast¹ *and* feble/ /ne the vices ne ben
 neuer mo with-owte payne / ne the vertuus ne ben nat¹ with-owte
 12 mede/ /*and* þat blysfulnesses comyn alwey to goode folk/ /*and*
 infortune comth alwey to wikkyd folk / *and* thow shalt wel
 knowe manye thinges of this kynde / þat shollen cesen thy
 pleyntes / *and* strengthyn the with stidfast sadnesse / *and* for thow
 16 hast seyn the forme of the verray blysfulnesse / by me þat haue
 whilom shewid it the/ /*and* thow hast knownen in whom blysfulnesse
 is I-set/ /alle thinges I tretim þat I trowe ben necessarye to putten
 forth / I shal shewe the / the wey þat shal bryngen the ayein vn to
 20 thin hows/ /*and* I shal fycchen fetheres in thi thouht / by whiche
 it may areyssen in heyhte / so þat alle tribulacyon ydon a-wey/ /thow
 by my gydyng *and* by my paath *and* by my sledys shal mowe
 retorne hool *and* sownd in to thi contree/ / /

The fyrste metur [*margin, leaf 110, back*]

24 **I** Haue forsothe swife fetheres þat surmounten the heyhte of
 heuene/ /whan the swifte thouht hath clothid it self in tho
 fetheres / it despiseth the hateful Erthes *and* surmountith the
 Roundnesse of the grete ayr/ /*and* it seth the clowdes by-
 28 hynde ²His bak / *and* passeth the heyhte of the regyon of the ffyr /
 þat eschaufeth by the swifte moeuyng of the fyrmament/ /til þat he
 areyseth hym in to the howses þat beren the sterres / *and* Ioyneth
 his weyes with the sonne phebus/ /*and* felawshipith the wey of the
 32 olde colde saturnis/ /*and* he ymaked a knyht of the clere sterre / þat
 is to seyn þat the thougt is makyd goddes knyht by the sekyng of

¹ leaf 110.

² leaf 111.

trowthe to comyn to the verray knoleche of god/ *and* thilke thocht
renneth by the cercle of the sterres/ in alle places *per* as the shynyng
nyht is painted/ *pat* is to seyn the nyht *pat* is clowdeles/ *ffor* on
nyhtes *pat* ben clowdeles it semeth as the heuene weere peyntyd with 4
diuerse ymages of sterris/ *and* whanne he hath Idoon there I-nowh
he shal forletyn the laste heuene / *and* he shal pressen and wyndyn
on the bak of the swifte firmament *and* he shal ben makid *parfit* of
worshipful lyht of god/ *ther* halt the lord of kynges the ceptre of 8
his myht / *and* a-tempreth the gouvernementus of the world/ *and* the
shynyng Iuge of thinges stable in hymself gouerneth the swifte cart
or wayn *pat* is to seyn the circular moeuyng of the sonne/ *and* yif
thy wey ledith the ayein so *pat* thou be browht thider / thanne 12
wolthow seye / now *pat* / that is the contre *pat* thou requerest / of
which thou ne haddest no mynde/ *but* now it remenbryth me wel
her was .I. born/ *her* wol I fastne my degre her wole I dwelle / but
yif the liketh thanne to lokyn on the dyrknesses of the erthe / *pat* 16
thou hast forleten / thanne shalthow sen *pat* thise felonos tyraunt;
/ *pat* the wrecchede pople dredith now shollen ben exiled fro thilke
fayre contre/ / /

The 2^e prose [*margin, leaf 115*]

THan seyde I thus / owh I wondre me / *pat* *pou* bihetist me 20
so grete thinges / ne .I. ne dowte nat *pat* *pou* ne mayst wel
performe *pat* thou by-hetist/ *But* .I. preye the oonly this /
pat thou ne tarye nat to telle me thilke thinges / *pat*
thou hast moeued/ *ffyrst quod* she thou moost nedes knowen / *pat* 24
goode folk ben alwey stronge *and* myhty / *and* the shrewes ben feeble
and dishert *and* naked of alle strengthes/ *and* of thise thinges /
Certes euerich of hem is declared *and* shewid by other/ *for* so as
good *and* yuel ben two contraries / yif so be *pat* good be stidefast / 28
than sheweth the feblesse of yuel al opiny/ *and* yif *pou* knowe
clerly the frelenesse of yuel / the stidefastnesse of good is knowen/ //
but for as moche as the fey of my sentence shal be the more ferme
and haboundaunt / I wil gon by *pat* oo wey *and* by *pat* oother / *and* 32
I wole conferme the thinges *pat* ben purposed / now on this side /
and now on *pat* side/ /two thinges ther ben in whiche the effect of

alle the dedis of mankynde standith / þat is to seyn wil *and* power /
and yif þat oon of these two faylyth ther nis no thing þat may be
 don / for yif þat wil lakkit / ther nis no wiht þat vndirtaketh to
 4 don þat he wol nat don / *and* yif power fayleth / the wil nis but in
 ydel *and* stant for nawht / *and* ther-of comht it þat yif thou see a
 wiht þat wolde geten þat he may nat geten thou mayst nat dowten
 þat power ne fayleth hym to haue þat he wolde / ¹this is opin *and*
 8 cler quod I ne it ne may nat ben denoyed in no Manere / *and* yif þou see
 a wyht quod she þat hath doon þat he wolde doon / þou nyht nat
 dowten þat ne hath had power to doon it / no quod I / *and* in þat
 that euery wyht may / in þat men may holden hym myhty / as who
 12 seyth in so moche as man is myhty to doon a thing / in so mochel men
 halt hym myhty / *and* in þat he ne may / in þat men demen hym to
 ben feble // I confesse it wel quod I / Remenbrith the quod she þat I
 haue gaddered / *and* shewed by forseide resouns þat al the entencion
 16 of the wil of mankynde which that is lad by diuerse studies hasteth
 to comen to blisfulnesse / it remenbrith me wel quod I þat it hath ben
 shewed / *and* recordeth the nat thanne quod she þat blisfulnesse is
 thilke same good þat men requeren / so þat whan blysfulnesse is re-
 20 quered of alle / þat good also is requered *and* desired of alle / it ne
 recordeth me nat quod I / for I haue it gretly alwey fichched in my
 memorye / Alle folk thanne quod she goode *and* eke badde enforcen
 hem with owte defference of entencion to comyn to good / this is a
 24 verray consequence quod I / *and* certeyn is quod she / þat by the
 getinge of good / ben men ymaked goode / this is certeyn quod I /
 thanne getin goode men þat they desiren / So semeth it quod I / but
 wikkede folk quod she yif they getyn the good þat they desiren /
 28 they ne mowe nat be wikkede / so is it quod I / thanne so as þat oon /
and þat oother quod she desiren good / *and* the goode foolk getin
 good / *and* nat the wikk' foolk / thanne nis it no dowte / þat the
 goode foolk ne ben myhti *and* wikkede folk ben feeble / who so þat
 32 euere quod I dowlth of this / he ne may nat considere the nature of
 thinges ne the consequence of Resouns / *and* ouer this quod she / yif
 þat ther be two thinges / þat han oo same purpose by kynde / *and*

¹ leaf 115, back.

þat oon of hem pursueth *and* parfo[r]meth thilke same thing by
naturel office / *and* þat oother ne may nat doon thilke naturel office /
by folwith by other manere / thanne is conuenable to nature hym þat
¹A-complesseth his purpos kyndeli / *and* yit he ne Acomplesseth nat 4
his owne purpos / wheyther of thise two demestow for moore myhty/
/yif þat I coniecte *quod* I þat þou wolt seye / algates yit I desire to
herkne it more pleynly of the / /thow nyht nat thanne denoye *quod*
she þat the Moeuement of goynge nis in Men by kynde / /no forsothe 8
quod I / /ne þou ne dowtest nat *quod* she þat thilke naturel office of
goynge ne be the the office of feet² / /I ne dowte it nat *quod* I / /thanne
quod she yif þat a wyht be myhty to moeue *and* goth vp on hise feet /
and another to whom thilke naturel office of feet lakketh enforceth 12
hym to goon crepinge vp on hise handes / /which of thise two owhte
to ben holden the Moore myhty by ryht / /knyt³ forth the remenaunt
quod I / for no wyht ne dowlth þat he þat may gon by naturel
office of feet / ne be moore myhty / than he þat ne may nat / /but the 16
souereyn good *quod* she / þat is eueneliche purposed to þe good folk
and to badde / the goode folk sekyn it by naturel office of vertuus /
/ *and* the shrewis enforcen hem to geten it by diuerse coueytyse of
ertheli thinges / /which þat nis no naturel office to getin thilke same 20
souereyn good / trowestow þat it be any other wise / nay *quod* I /
for the consequence is opyn *and* shewinge of thinges þat I haue
graunted / þat nedes goode folk moten ben myhty / *and* shrewes
feeble *and* vnmyhty / /thow rennist a ryht by-for me *quod* she / *and* 24
this is the Iugement þat is to seyn / /I Iuge of the ryht as thise leches
ben wont to hopyn of sike folk / whan they aperceyuen þat nature is
redressed / *and* withstondith to the maledie / but for I se the now
al redi to the vndirstondinge / /I shal shewe the moore thikke *and* 28
continuel resouns / ffor loke now how gretly shewith the feblesse *and*
infirmite of wikkede folk þat ne mowen nat comyn to þat hir naturel
entencium ledith hem / *and* yit almost thilke naturel entencion
constreinith / *and* what weere to demen thanne of shrewes / yif thilke 32
naturel help hadde forletin hem / /the which naturel help of enten-
cion ⁴goth a-wey by-for hem / *and* is so gret þat vnnethe it may

¹ leaf 116.

² gloss: .i. pedum.

³ gloss: .i. contexe.

⁴ leaf 116, back.

ben ouercome/ /considere thanne how gret deffaute of power *and* how
 gret feblesse ther is in wikkede felonos folk/ /as who seyth the gretter
 thing *pat* is coueyted / *and* the desire nat acomplised / of the lasse
 4 myht is he *pat* coueyteth it *and* may nat acomplisse/ /*and* forthi
 philosophie seyth thus by souereyn good/ /ne shrewes ne requeren nat
 lyhte meedis ne veyn games / whiche they ne may folwen ne holden /
 but they faylen of thilke somme *and* of the heyhte of thinges / *pat*
 8 is to seyn souereyn good/ /ne thise wrechches ne comyn nat to the
 effect of souereyn good / the which they enforcen hem oonly to geten /
 by nyhtes *and* by dayes/ /in the getinge of which good the strengthe
 of good foolk¹ is ful wel ysene/ /for ryht so as thow myhtest demen
 12 hym myhty of goinge *pat* goth on his feet/ tyl he myhte come to
 thilke place fro the whiche place ther ne laye no wey forthere to ben
 gon / ryht so most thow nedes demen hym for ryht myhty *pat* getith
and ateynith to the ende of alle thinges *pat* ben to desired / by-yonde
 16 the whiche ende ther nis nothing to desire/ /of the which power of
 good folk¹ men may conclude *pat* the wikked men semen to be
 bareyne *and* naked of alle strengthe/ /ffor whi forletyn they vertuus
and folwen vices / nis it nat for *pat* they ne knowen nat the goodes /
 20 but what thing is moore feeble *and* more caytyf thanne is the blynd-
 nesse of ignoraunce/ /or elles they knowen ful wel whiche thinges *pat*
 they owhten folwe / but lecherie *and* coueytise ouerthrowith hem
 mys-torned/ /*and* certys so doth distemperaunce to feeble men *pat* ne
 24 mowen nat wrastlen ayenis the vices/ /ne knowen they nat thanne /
 wel *pat* thei forletyn the good wilfully / *and* tornen hem wilfully
 to vices/ /*and* in this wyse they ne forletyn nat oonly to ben
 myhty / but they forletyn al owtrely in any whise for to ben/
 28 /ffor they *pat* forletyn the comune fyn of alle thinges *pat* ben/
 /they¹ forletyn also ther-with-al for to ben / *and* per auenture it
 sholde semen to som folk¹ *pat* this weere a merveylye to seyn / *pat*
 shrewes whiche *pat* contienen the Moore partye of men / ne ben nat
 32 ne han no beynge/ /but natheles it is so / *and* thus stant this thing/
 /for thei *pat* ben shrewes / I denoye nat *pat* they ben shrewes / but
 I denoye *and* seye sympeli *and* pleynly *pat* thei ne ben nat / ne han no

¹ leaf 117.

beynge/ /ffor ryht as thow myhtest seyen of the carayne of a man /
þat it weere a ded man / but thow ne myhtest nat symplely callen it
a man/ /So graunte I wel forsothe þat visious folk¹ ben wikked / but
I ne may nat graunten absolutly *and* symplely / þat they ben/ /for 4
thilke thing þat withholdeth ordre *and* kepith nature / thilke thing
is *and* hath beynge/ / but what thing þat fayleth of þat / þat is to
seyn þat he forletith naturel ordre he forletith thilke beinge þat is set
in his nature/ /but thow wolt seyn þat shrewen mowen/ /Certes þat 8
ne denoye I nat / but certes hyr power ne dessendit nat of strengthe /
but of feeblese/ / ffor thei mowen don wikkednesses / the whiche
they ne myhte nat don yif they myhten dwellin in the forme *and* in
the doynge of good folk/ /*and* thilke power shewith ful evidently þat 12
they ne mowen ryht nawht/ /ffor so as I haue gadered *and* proeued a
littel her byforn þat yuel is nawht / *and* so as shrewes mowen oonly
but shrewednesses/ /this conclusion¹ is al cleer þat shrewes ne mowen
ryht nawht ne han no power/ /*and* for as moche as þou vndirstonde / 16
which is the strengthe of this power of shrewes / I haue diffinissed a
littel her by-forn / þat nothing is so myhty as souereyn good/ /þat is
soth *quod* I/ /*and* thilke same souereyn good may don non yuel//
Certes no *quod* I/ /is ther any wyht thanne *quod* she þat weneth 20
þat men mowen doon alle thinges/ /no man *quod* I/ /but he be owr
of his witte/ /but certes shrewes mowen don yuel *quod* she/ /ye wolde
god *quod* I that ¹they myhten don non/ /thanne *quod* she so as he
þat is myhty to doon oonly but goode thinges may don alle thinges / 24
and they þat ben myhty to don yuele thinges ne mowen nat alle
thinges / thanne is it opin thing *and* manifest / þat they þat mowen
don yuel ben of lasse power/ /*and* yit to proeue this conclusion ther
helpeth me this þat I haue isshewed her by-forn/ /þat alle power is to 28
be nowmbryd among thinges þat men owhten requere/ /And I haue
shewid þat alle thinges þat owhten ben desired ben referred to good
Ryht as to a manere heyhte of hir nature/ /but for to Mowen don yuel
and felonie ne may nat ben referred to good/ /thanne nis nat yuel of 32
the nowmbyr of thinges þat owhte ben desired/ /but alle power owhte
ben desired *and* requered / than is it opin *and* cler þat the power ne

¹ leaf 117, back.

the Mowinge of shrewes nis no power / *and* of alle thise thinges it
 sheweth wel þat the goode folk' ben certeynly myhty *and* the shrewes
 dowteles ben vnmyhty / / *and* it is cler *and* opyn þat thilke sentence
 4 of plato is verray *and* soth / þat seyth þat oonly wyse men may doon
 þat they desiren / / *and* shrewes mowen hawnten þat hem liketh / /but
 þat they desiren þat is to seyn to comyn to souereyn good / they ne
 han no power to a-complissen þat / ffor shrewes don þat hem lyst /
 8 whan by the thinges in which they deliten / they wenen to ateyne to
 thilke good þat they desyren / /but they ne getyn ne ateynen nat
 ther to / for vices ne comyn nat blysfulnesse / / /

The 2^{de} Metur [*margin, leaf 118*]

12 **W** Ho so þat the couertoures of hir veyn aparayles myhte
 strepyn of thise prowde kynges / þat þou seest sitten
 on heygh on hir charyes glyteringe in shynynge purpre /
 enuyrowned with sorwful armures / Manassinge with
 crwel Mowth / blowinge by woodnesse of herte / /he sholde seen
 16 thanne þat thilke lordes beren with-inne hyr corages ful streyte
 cheynes / /for lecherie tormentith hem in þat oon syde with gredy
 venyms / *and* trowblable Ire þat arayseth in hym the floodes of
 trwblynges tormentith vp on þat oother side hyr thowht / /Or sorwe
 20 halt hym weery *and* y-kawht / or slidinge *and* deceyuynghe hope
 tormentith hem / /*and* therfore syn þou seest oon heed / þat is to seyn
 oon tyraunt beeren so manye tyranyes / thanne ne doth thilke tyraunt
 nat that he desireth / syn he is cast down with so manye wikkede
 24 lordes / þat is to seyn with so manye vices þat han so wikkedly
 lordshippes ouer hym / /

¶ The iij^{de} prose [*margin, leaf 120*]

28 **S** Eestow nat thanne in how gret fylthe thise shrewes ben
 ywrappyd / *and* with which cleernesse thise good foolk' shynen /
 /In this sheweth it wel / þat to goode foolk' ne lakketh neuer
 mo hir meedes / ne shrewes lakken neuer mo tormentz / ffor
 of alle thinges þat ben ydoon / thilke thing for which any thing is
 don / it semyth as by Ryht þat thilke thing be the Meede of þat / /as

thus yif a man renneth in the stadie or in the forlong for the corone /
thanne lith the Meede in the corone for which he renneth/ *and* I
haue shewed þat blysfulnesse is thilke same good / for which þat alle
thinges ben doon / thanne is thilke same good purposed to the workes 4
of mankynde ryht as a comune meede which meede ne may ben
desseyuered fro good folk/ for no wiht as by Ryht fro thennes forth
þat hym lakketh goodnesse / ne shal ben clepyd good/ *ffor* which
thing folk of goode maneres hir meedes ne forsaken hem *neuer* mo/ 8
ffor al be it so þat shrewes wexen as woode as hem list ayenis goode
folk / yit *neuer* the leese the corone of wyse men shal nat fallen ne
faaden / for foreyne shrewednesse ne by-nymyth nat fro the corages of
goode folk hir propre honour / but yif þat any wiht reioyse hym of 12
goodnesse þat he hadde taken fro *with* owte / as who seyht yif þat any
wiht hadde his goodnesse of any oother man than of hym self / certes
he þat yaf hym thilke goodnesse / or elles som oother wyht myhte
be-nyme it hym/ *but* for as moche as to euery wyht his owne propre 16
bownte yeueth hym his Meede / thanne at erst shal he faylen of Meede
whan he forletith to ben good/ *and* at the last so as alle Meedes ben
requered for men weenen þat they ben goode / who is he þat nolde
deme / þat he that is ryht myhty of good weere part-les of the Meede/ 20
and of what Meede shal he be gerdoned / certes of ryht fayre Meede
and ryht grete a-bouen alle Meedes/ *remenbre* the of thilke noble
corolarye / þat I yat the a litel her byforn / *and* gadere it to-gidere
in this manere/ *so* as good hym self² his blisfulnesse / thanne is it 24
cleer *and* certeyn þat alle good folk ben made blysful for they ben
goode/ *and* thilke folk þat ben blysful it a-cordeth *and* is couenable
to ben goddes/ *thanne* is the Meede of goode folk swich þat no day
shal enpeyren it / ne no wikkednesse ne shal derken it / ne power of 28
no wyht ne shal nat amenusen it / þat is to seyn to ben made
goddes/ *and* syn it is thus þat goode Men ne faylen *neuer* mo of hir
Meede / Certes no wysman ne may dowte of vndepartable peyne of
the shrewes / þat is to seyn that the peyne of shrewes ne departeth 32
nat from hem self *neuer* Mo / *ffor* so as goode *and* yuel *and* peyne
and Meedes ben contrarye / it mot nedes ben that Ryht as we seen by-

¹ leaf 120, back.² gloss: .i. ipsum bonum.

tyden in gerdown ¹of goode / þat also mot the peyne of yuel answey
 by contrarye party to shrewes/ /Now thanne so as bownte *and* prowesse
 ben the Meede to goode foolke / Also is shrewednesse it self torment to
 4 shrewes/ /thanne who so þat euer is entechched *and* defowled with
 yuel / yif shrewes thanne wolen preysen hem self / may it semen to
 hem / þat they ben / with owten party of torment / syn they ben
 swiche þat the vtteriste wikkednesse / þat is to seyn wikkede thewes² /
 8 which þat is the owttereste *and* the worste kynde of shrewednesse
 ne defowleth ne entechcheth nat hem oonly but infecteth *and*
 enuenuymeth hem gretly/ /*and* also looke on shrewes þat ben the
 contrarye party of goode Men / how gret peyne felawshippith *and*
 12 folueth hem / for þou hast lerned a lytel her by forn / þat alle thing þat
 is *and* hath beyng is oon / *and* thilke same oon is good / thanne is
 this the consequence / þat it semyth wel / þat alle þat is *and* hath
 beyng is good / this is to seyn as who seyth þat beyng *and* vnite
 16 *and* goodnesse is al oon / *and* in this manere it folweth thanne þat
 alle thing þat fayleth to ben good it styntyth forto be *and* forto
 han any beyng/ /wherfore³ it is / þat shrewes styntyn forto ben þat
 they weeren/ /but thilke oother forme of mankynde / þat is to seyn
 20 the forme of the body with-owte sheweth yit that thise shrewes
 weeren whilom men / wher-for whan they ben peruerted *and* torned
 in to Malice / certes than han they forlorn the nature of mankynde/
 /but so oonly bownte *and* prowesse may enhawsen euery man ouer
 24 oother men / thanne mot it nedes be þat shrewes which þat shrewed-
 nesse hath cast owt of the condicion of mankynde / ben put vndyr
 the mer[i]tte *and* the desert of men/ /thanne bytydeth it / þat yif þou
 seest a wyht þat be tranformed in to vices / thow ne mayst nat weene
 28 þat he be a man/ /ffor yif he be ardaunt in aueryce / *and* þat he be a
 rauaynour / by vyolence of foreyne rychesse / thow shalt ⁴seyn þat he
 is lyke to the wolf/ /*and* yif he be felonows *and* with-owte reste *and*
 excersise his tonge to chidinges / þou shalt lykkne hym to the hownd//
 32 *and* yif he be a preuey awaytor I-hidd *and* reioyseth hym to Rauysse
 by whiles / þou shalt seyn hym lyke to the fox whelpes/ /*and* yif he be
 distempre *and* quakith for Ire / men shal weene þat he bereth the corage

¹ leaf 121.

² *gloss*: .i. condiciouns.

³ *gloss*: quo fit.

⁴ leaf 121 back.

of a lyon/ /and yif he be dredful *and* fleynge *and* dredith thinges þat
 ne owhten nat to ben dredð / men shal holden hym lyk to the hert/
 /and yif he be slowh *and* astonyd *and* lache he lyuyth as an asse/ /and
 yif he be lith *and* vnstidefast of corage *and* chaungith ay hise studies / 4
 he is lykned to bryddes/ /and yif he be plownged in fowle *and*
 vnclene luxuris / he is withholden in the fowle delices of the fowle
 sowe/ /thanne folueth it þat he þat forletith bownte *and* prowesse / he
 forletith to ben a man/ /syn he may nat passen in to the condicion 8
 of god he is torned in to a best/ / /

¶ The 3^{de} Metur [margin, leaf 122, back]

EVrus the wynde aryuede the sayles of vlixes duc of the
 contre of narice *and* his wandrynge shippes by the see/ / in
 to the Ile there as Cirtes / the fayre goddesse / dowhter of 12
 the sonne dwelith / þat medleth to hire newe gestes / drynkes
 þat ben towched *and* maked *with* enchauntements/ /and after þat hir
 hand myhty ouer the herbes hadde chaunged hir gestes in to diuerse
 maneres / þat oon of hem is couered his face *with* forme of a boere / 16
 þat oother is chaunged in to a lyoun of the contre of marmorike /
and hise nayles *and* hise teth wexen/ /þat oother of hem is neweliche
 chaunged in to a wolf / *and* howleth whan he wolde wepe / þat oother
 goth debonayrely in the hows as a tygre of Inde/ / but al be it so þat 20
 the godhed of Mercurie / þat is clepid the bryd of archadie / hath had
 mercy of the duke vlixes / bisegyd *with* diuerse yueles/ /and hath
 vnbownded hym fro the pestelence of his oostesse / algates the Roweres
and the maryneres hadden by this I-drawn in to hir Mowthes *and* 24
 dronken the wikkede drynkes/ /they that weeren wexen swyn /
 hadden by this Ichaunged hir mete of bred/ /forto eten akkornes of
 okes/ /non of hir lemes ne dwelleth *with* hem hool / but they han
 lost the voyce *and* the body/ /oonly hyr thowht dwelleth *with* hem 28
 stable / þat weepith & byweyleth the Monstruos chaun¹gynge þat they
 suffren/ /O ouer lyht hand / as who seyth / O feble *and* lyht is the
 hand of cirtes the enchaunteresse / þat chaungeth the bodies of folkys
 in to bestys to regard *and* to comparisoun of Mutasion þat is maked 32

¹ leaf 123.

by vices/ /ne the herbis of cirtes ne ben nat myhty / for al be it so
 þat they may chaungen the lymes of the body / algates yit they may
 nat chaunge the hertes/ /ffor with-iane is thydd the strengthe *and*
 4 vigor of men / in the secre toure of hir hertes / þat is to seyn the
 strengthe of reson/ /but thilke venym of vices to-drawn a man to
 hem moore myhtyly than the venym of cirtes/ /ffor vices ben so cruel
 þat they percen *and* thorw passen the corage with Inne/ /*and* thogh
 8 they ne anoye nat the body / yit vices wooden to destroyen men by
 wownde of thowht.

¶ The ferthe prose [margin, leaf 127]

12 **T**Han seyde I thus / I confesse *and* am a-knowe it *quod* I / ne
 I ne se nat / þat men may sayn as by ryht þat shrewes ne
 ben chaunged in to bestis by the qualyte of hyr sowles / al
 be it so þat they kepyn yit the forme of the body of man-
 kynde/ /but I nolde nat of shrewes of whiche the thowht cruel
 woodeth alwey in to destruccion of goode men / þat it weere leueful
 16 to hem to don þat/ /*Certes quod* she ne it nys nat leueful to hem /
 As I shal wel shewe the in couenabele place / but natheles yif so
 weere þat thilke þat men weenen be leueful to shrewes weere by-
 nomen hem so þat they ne myhte nat anoyen or doon harm to goode
 20 men / *Certes* a gret partye of the peyne to shrewes sholde ben allegged
and releued for al be it so þat this ne same nat credible thing¹ per
 auenture to some folk / yit moot it nedes be / þat shrewes ben moore
 wrechches *and* vnsely whan they may doon *and* performe þat they
 24 coueyten / than yif they myhte nat complysen þat they coueyten/
 / ffor yif so be þat it be wrechchednesse to wylne to don yuel / than
 is moore wrechchednesse to Mowen doon yuel / with owte whiche
 mowyng the wretched wil sholde langesse with owte effect/ /than
 28 syn þat eueryche of thise thinges hath his wrechchednesse / þat is to
 seyn / wyl to doon yuel / *and* Mowyng to don yuel / it mot nedes
 be þat they ben constreynyd / by the vnselynesses / þat woolen *and*
 Mowen *and* performen felonies *and* shrewednesses / I acorde me *quod*
 32 I / but I desire gretly þat shrewes losten sone thilke vnselynysses /

¹ leaf 127, back.

pat is to seyn pat shrewes weeren despoyled of mowynge to don yuel/
/ So shullen they *quod* she / *sonnere per auenture* than thou woldest /
or *sonnere* than they hem self weene / for ther nis no thing so late
in the short bowndes of this lyf / pat is long to a-byde / namelyche 4
to a corage in-mortal / of whiche shrewes / the grete hope *and* the
hye compassinges of shrewednesses / is ofte destroyed by a sodeyn
ende or they ben war / *and* pat thing establyth to shrewes the ende of
hir shrewednesse / for yif pat shrewednesse maketh wrechches / 8
than mot he nedes ben most wrechched pat lengest is a shrewe / the
whiche wikked shrewes wolde I demen aldermost vnsely *and* caytyfs /
yif pat hir shrewednesse ne weere fynysht at the leste wey / by
the owttteryste deth / for yif I haue concluded soth of the vnselynnesse 12
of shrewednesse / than shewith it cleerly pat thilke wrechchednesse is
¹*with*-owten ende the whiche is certeyn to ben perdurable / Certes
quod I this conclusion is hard *and* wondirful to graunte / but I
knowe wel pat it a-cordeth moche to the thinges pat I haue graunted 16
her by-forn / thou hast *quod* she the ryht estimacion of this / but
who so euer weene pat it be an hard thing to a-corde hym to a con-
clusion / it is ryht pat he shewe / pat some of the premysse ben
false / or elles he moot shewe pat the collacions of proposicions nis 20
nat spedful to a necessarye conclusion / *and* yif it ne be nat so / but
pat the premysse ben ygraunted / ther nis not² why he sholde blame
the argument / for this thing that I shal telle the now ne shal nas
seme lasse wondyrful / but of the thinges that ben taken also it it 24
necessarye / as ho³ seyth it folweth of that which that is purposed
by-forn / what is that *quod* I / Certes *quod* she that is that thise
wykked shrewes ben moore blysfyl or elles lasse wrechches pat a-byen
the tormentz that they han deseruyd / than yif no peyne of Iustice 28
ne chastysede hem / ne this ne seye I nat now / for that any man
myhte thinke / pat the maners of shrewes ben coriged *and* chastised
by venyaunce / *and* that they ben browht to the ryht wey by the
drede of the torment / ne for that they yeuen to oother folk ensauple 32
to fien fro vices / but I vnderstande yif in a nother manere / pat
shrewes ben moore vnsely whan they ne ben nat punysed / al be it

¹ leaf 128.², ³ *not, ho*, overline : by a corrector.

so þat ther ne be had no reson or lawe of correcsyon / ne non en-
saumple of lookynge/ /and what manere shal that ben quod I / oother
than hath be told her by-forn/ /haue we nat thanne graunted quod
4 she / þat goode folk ben blysful and shrewes ben wrechches/ /yis
quod I/ /thanne quod she yif þat any good weere added to the
wrechchednesse of any wyht / nis he nat moore weleful than he þat
ne hath no Medlynge of good in his solitarie wrechchednesse/ /So
8 semyth it quod /I./ and what seystow thanne quod she of thilke
wrechche þat lakked alle goodes / so þat no 'good nis medlyd in hijs
wrechchednesse / and yit ouer al his wykkednesse for which he is a
wrechche þat ther be yit a nother yuel anexed and knytte to hym//
12 shal nat men demen hym more vnsely / than thilke wrechche of
whiche the vnselynesse is releued by the partycipacion of som good//
whi sholde he nat quod I/ /thanne certes quod she han shrewes whan
they ben punysshed / som what of good anexed to hyr wrechchednesse /
16 that is to seyn the same payne þat they suffryn / which þat is good
by the reson of Iustyce // and whan thilke same shrewes ascapyn with-
owte torment / than han they som what moore of yuel / yit ouer the
wykkednesse that they han don / þat is to seyn defaute of payne /
20 which defaute of payne thow hast graunted is yuel / for the deserte
of felonye/ /I. ne may nat denye it quod I/ /Moche moore thanne
quod she ben shrewes vnsely whan they ben wrongfully delyueryd
fro payne / than whan they ben punysshed by ryhtful venyaunce/ /but
24 this is opyn thyng and cler þat it is ryht / þat shrewes ben punysshed /
and it is wykkednesse and wrong þat they escapyn vnpunysshed//
who myhte deneye þat quod I/ /but quod she may any man denye þat
al that is ryht nis good / and also the contrarye / þat al that is wrong
28 is wykke/ /Certes quod I thise thinges ben cleere I-nowh / and þat we
han concludyd alyter her byforn/ /but I preye the þat thow telle me
yif þou acordest to leten no torment to sowles after þat the body is
endyd by the deth/ /this is to seyn vndirstandystow awht þat sowles
32 han any torment after the deth of the body/ /Certes quod she yee /
and þat ryht gret / of whiche sowles quod she / I trowe þat some ben
tormentyd / by asprenesse of payne / and some sowles I trowe ben

exercised / by apurginge mekenesse/ /but my conseyl nis nat to
determenye of this peynes / but I haue trauayled *and* told / yit hider-
to / for thow sholdest knowe / *pat* the Mowynge¹ of shrewes / which
Mowynge the semyth to ben vnworthy ²nis no mowynge / *and* ek of 4
shrewes of which *pou* pleyndyst *pat* they ne weere nat punysshed /
pat *pou* woldest seyn / *pat* they ne weeren neuer mo *with-owten* the
tormentz of hyr wykkednesse / *and* of the licence of Mowynge to don
yuel / *pat* thow preydyst *pat* it myhte sone ben endyd / *and* *pat* *pou* 8
woldest fayn lerne *pat* it ne sholde nat longe dure / *and* *pat* shrewes
ben Moore vnsely yif they weere of lengere durynge / *and* most
vnsely yif they weeryn *perdurable*/ *and* after this I haue shewed the
pat moore vnsely ben shrewes / whan they escapyn *with-owte* hir 12
ryhtful payne / than whan they ben punyssed by ryhtful venyaunce/
and of this sentence folweth it that thanne ben shrewes constreynyd
at the laste *with* most greuos torment / whan men weene that they
ne be nat punysshed / whan I considere thy resoun *quod* I / I ne 16
trowe nat *pat* men seyn any thing¹ moore verayl/ *and* yif I torne a-
yeyn to the studyes of men who is he to whom it sholde seme *pat* he
ne sholde nat oonly leuen thise thinges / but ek gladly herkne hem/
Certes quod she so it is / but men may nat / for they han hire Eyen 20
so wont to the derknesse of erthely thinges / *pat* they ne may nat
lyften hem vp to the lyht of cleer sothfastnesse / but they ben lyke to
bryddes of which the nyht lyhtneth hir lookynge / *and* the day
blyndeth hem/ *for* whan men lookyn nat the ordre of thinges / but 24
hir lustis *and* talentz / they weene *pat* eyther the leue or the Mowynge
to don wykkednesse or elles the schapynge *with-owte* payne be
weleful/ *but* considere the Iugement of the *perdurable* lawe / for yif
pou conferme thy corage to the beste thinges / *pou* ne hast no nede 28
of no Iuge to yeuen the prys or mede/ *for* thow hast loyned thy self
to the moost excellent thing / *and* yif thow haue enclyned thy
studyes to the wykked thinges / ne sek¹ no foreyne wrekere owt of
thy self / for thow thy self / hast thurst thy self in to wikke ³thinges 32
/ Ryht as thow myhtest loken the fowle erthe by diuerse tymes / *and*
the heuene / *and* *pat* alle other thinges stynten fro *with* owte / so *pat*

¹ gloss: .i. myght.² leaf 129.³ leaf 129, back.

thow nere neyther in heuenene ne in erthe / ne saye no thing moore /
than sholde it semen to the as by oonly resoun of lookynge / þat
thow weere now in the sterres / *and* now in the erthe/ /but the poeple
4 ne lookyth nat in thise thinges / what thanne/ /shal we thanne
aprochen vs to hem þat I haue shewyd þat they ben lyk to bestys/¹
/*and* what woltow seyn of this/ /yif þat a man hadde al for-lorn his
syhte *and* hadde foryetyn þat he euer sawh / *and* wende þat nothing
8 ne faylede hym of perfeccion of mankynde / now we þat myhten sen
the same thinges / wolde we nat weene þat he weere blynde²/ /ne also
ne acordith nat the poeple to þat I shal seyn / the which thing
sustenyd by a stronge fowndement of resouns / þat is to seyn that
12 moore vnsely ben they þat don wrong to oothre folk / than they þat
the wrong suffren / I wolde heren thylke same resouns *quod* I//
denyestow *quod* she þat alle shrewes ne ben worthy to han torment
//nay *quod* I/ /but *quod* she I am certeyn by many resouns þat
16 shrewes ben vnsely/ /it acordith *quod* I./ /thanne ne dowtestow nat
quod she / þat thilke folk þat ben worthi of torment þat they ne ben
wrechches/ /it a-cordeth wel *quod* I/ /yif thow weere thanne yset a
Iuge or a knowere of thinges / trowestow þat men sholden tormenten
20 hym / þat hath don the wrong/ /or elles hym þat hath suffred the
wrong/ /I ne dowte nat *quod* I þat I nolde don satisfaccion to hym
þat hadde suffred the wrong / by the sorwe of hym that hadden don
the wrong/ /thanne semyth it *quod* she þat the doere of wrong is
24 moore wrechche / þat he þat suffred wrong/ /that folweth wel *quod*
I/ /than *quod* she by thise causes *and* by othre causes þat ben of
enforced by the same Roote / fylthe or synne by the propre nature of
it maketh men wrechches/ /*and* it sheweth wel / þat the wrong that
28 men don nis ³nat the wrechchednesse of hym þat reseuyth the
wrong/ /but certes *quod* she thise oratours or aduocat3 don al the
contrarye/ /for they enforcen hem to commoeue the Iuges to han pite
of hem þat han suffred / *and* resseyued the thinges þat ben greuos
32 *and* aspre/ /*and* yit men sholden moore ryhtfully han pite of hem þat
don the greunaunces *and* the wronges/ /the whiche shrewes it weere a
moore couenable thing/ /that the accusours or aduocat3 / nat wroth

¹ *overline gloss* : *quod dicitur* (or *quasi dicat*) non. ² *gloss* : q. d. sic. ³ leaf 130.

but pitous *and* debonayre ledden tho shrewes þat han don wrong^t to the Iugement / ryht as men ledyn syke folk to the leche / for þat they sholden seken owt the maladies of synne by torment/ *and* by this couenaunt ether the entente of deffendours or aduokat^z sholde 4 fayle *and* cesen in al / or elles yif the office of aduocat^z wolde bettre profyten to men it sholde ben torned in to the habite of accusacion / þat is to seyn they sholden accuse shrewes / *and* nat excuse hem *and* ek the shrewes hem self yif it weere leueful to hem to sen at any 8 clyfte the vertu that they han forleten / *and* sawh that they sholden putten adown the felthes of hir vices / by the torment^z of peynes / they ne owhte nat ryht for the recompensacyon for to geten hem bownte *and* prowessse which þat they han lost/ demen ne holden þat 12 thilke peynes weeren torment^z to hem/ *and* ek they wolden refuse the attendaunce of hir aduocat^z / *and* taken hem self to hyr Iuges / *and* to hir accusors/ /ffor which it bytidith / þat as to the wyse folk ther nis no place fleten to hate / þat is to seyn that ne hate hath no 16 place amonges wyse men/ /for no wyht nyl haten goode men / but yif he weere ouer mochel a fool/ *and* for to haten shrewes / it nis no reson / for ryht so as langwissynges is maledye of body ryht so ben vices *and* synne maledye of corage/ *and* so as we ne deme nat þat they 20 þat ben syke of hir body / ben worthy to ben hated / but rather worthy of pyte / wel ¹Moore worthi nat to ben hated / but for to ben had in pite / ben they of whiche the thowhtes ben constreynyd by felonows wykkednesse / þat is moore cruwel than any langwyssynge 24 of body /

¶ The ferthe Metur [*margin, leaf 130, back*]

W Hat deliteth yow to exciten so grete Moeuyng^e of hateredes / *and* to hasten *and* bysyen the fatal disposicion of yowre deth with yowre propre handes / þat is to seyn by batayles or by kontek^t/ /ffor yif ye axen 28 the deth / it hasteth hym of his owne wyl / ne deth ne taryeth nat his swifte hors²/ *and* the men þat the serpent *and* the lyown *and* þe tygre / *and* the beere / *and* the boor seken to slen with hir teth/ /yit thilke

¹ leaf 130, back.

² gloss : .i. disposiciones odii.

same men seken to slen euerych of hem oother / with swerd / lo for
 hir maneres ben diuerse *and* descordaunt / ¹they moeuen vnryhtful
 oostes *and* crwel batayles / *and* wylnen to perise by entrechaungynges
 4 of dartes / /but the resoun of crwelte nis nat I-nowgh ryhtful / wiltow
 thanne yelden² a couenable gerdoun to the desertes of men / /Loue
 ryhtfully goode folk' *and* haue pite on shrewes / /

¶ The fyfthe prose [*margin, leaf 131, back*]

8 **T**Husse I wel quod I / eyther what blysfulnesse / or elles³ what
 vnselnesse is establyssed in the desertes of goode men / *and*
 of shrewes / /but in this ilke fortune of poeple I se somewhat
 of good / *and* somewhat of yuel / ffor no wyse man hath
 leuere ben exiled / poore / *and* nedy / *and* nameles / than for to
 12 dwellen in his Cyte *and* flowren of Rychesses / *and* be redowtable by
 honour / *and* strong of power / /for in this wyse more clerly / &
 more wytnessefully is the office of wyse men I-treted / whan the
 blysfulnesse *and* the powste of gouernours is / as it weere I-shadd
 16 amonges poeples / þat be nesshebers *and* subgitz / /syn þat namely
 prysoun lawe / *and* thise oothre tormentz / of lawful peynes / ben
 rather owed to felonos citezeins / for the whiche felonos ⁴cetezeins /
 tho peynes ben establysshed than for good folk' / /thanne I meruayle
 20 me gretly quod I / /why þat the thinges ben so mys entrechaunged /
 þat tormentz of felonyes pressen *and* confownden goode folk' / *and*
 shrewes rauysshew medes of vertu *and* ben in honours *and* in gret
 estat / /*and* I desire ek for to weten of the what semyth the to ben
 24 the resoun of this so wrongful a conclusion / for I wolde wondre wel
 the lasse yif I trowede þat al thise thinges / weeren medled by
 fortounous happe / but now hepyth *and* encresith myn astonyenge /
 /God / gouernour of thinges / þat so as god yeueth ofte tymes to
 28 goode men goodes *and* myrthes / *and* to shrewes yuelis *and* aspre
 thinges / /*and* yeueth ayeinward to goode folk' hardnesses *and* to
 shrewes he grauntyth hym hir wyl / *and* þat they desiren / /what
 difference thanne may ther be by-twixen þat þat god doth / *and* þe
 32 happe of fortune / /yif men ne knowe nat the cause why þat it is / /ne

¹ leaf 131.

^{2,3} Yelden, elles, *interlined by corrector.*

⁴ leaf 132. (The z of cetezeins is the z of tormentz, &c.)

it nis no Merueyle quod she thowhg / þat men wenen þat ther be
somwhat¹ folyssh and confuse / whan the reson of the ordre is
vnknowe / but al thogh þat þou ne knowe nat the cause of so gret a
disposicion / natheles for as moche as god the goode gouernour⁴
atemprith and gouernith the world / ne dowte the nat þat alle
things ben doon a ryht.

¶ The fyfthe Metur [*margin, leaf 132, back*].

W Ho so þat ne knowe nat the sterres of arctour / I-torned
neygh to the souereyn contre or poynt / þat is to seyn⁸
I-torned nygh to the souereyn pool of the fyrmament//
and wot nat why the sterre boetes passeth or gaderith
hise weyues / and drencheth his late flambe in the see / and whi þat
boetes the sterre vnfoldith his ouerswifte arsynges / thanne shal he¹²
wondryn of the lawe of the heye eyr¹ / and ek yif þat he ne knowe nat
why þat the hornes of the fulle Moene wexen paale and Infect by
bowndes² of the derke nyht³ / and how the Moene dyrk and confuse
discouereth the sterres / þat she⁴ hadde Icouered by hir cleere visage /
16 /the comune erroure moeueth folk¹ and makyt weery hyr basynnes of
bras by thilke strokes / þat is to seyn that ther is a manere of poeple
þat hihte coribandes þat weenen þat whan the moene is in the eclypse /
þat it be enchauntyd / and therfore for to rescowe the moene they²⁰
betyn hyr basyns with thilke strokes / ne no man ne wondrith whan
the blases of þe wynd chorus beten the strondes of the see / by
quakyng floodes / ne no manne wondrith whan the weyhte of sonwh
I-hardyd by the colde is resolued by the brennyng hete of phebz the²⁴
sonne / for her sen men redely the causes / but the causes I-hid þat is
to seyn in heuene trowblen the brestys of men / the moeuable poeple
is astonyd of alle things þat comyn selde and sodeynly in owre age /
but yif the trowbly erroure of owre ignoraunce departede fro vs / so²³
þat we wysten the causes / why þat swyche things by-tyden / certes
they sholden cese to seme wondres

¹ gloss: vel heuene, in a later hand.

³ gloss: .i. eclipsis.

² leaf 133.

⁴ gloss: .s. Luna.

¶ The syxte prose [*margin, leaf 139*].

THos is it *quod* I/ /but so as þou hast yeuen or by-hyhte me /
to vnwrappen the hyd causes of thinges / *and* to discouere me
the resouns couered with dyrknesses .I. prey the þat þou
4 deuyse *and* Iuge me of this matere / *and* þat þou don me to
vndirstondyn it / for this meracle or this wondyr / trowblith me ryht
gretly/ *and* thanne she a lytel what smyllynge seyde / þou clepist me
quod she to telle thing þat is grettest of alle thinges þat mowen ben
8 axed/ *and* to the whiche question vnnethes is ther awht Inogh to
lauen it / as who seyth vnnethes is ther suffisauntly any thing to
answere parfytly to thy question / for the matere of it is swych / þat
whan o dowte is determyned *and* kut away / ther wexen oother
12 dowtes with-owte nowmbyr / ryht as the heuedes wexen of ydre the
serpent þat Ercules slowh/ /ne ther ne weere no manere ne non ende /
but yif þat a wyht constreynede tho dowtes by a ryht lyfly *and*
quyk fyre of thowht/ /þat is to seyn bi vigour / *and* strengthe of wit/
16 /for in this matere men weeren wont to maken questions of the
symplicite of the puruyaunce of god / *and* of the ordyr of destine /
and of sodeyn happe/ *and* of the knowynge *and* predestinacion
diuine / *and* of the lyberte of fre wille / the whiche thinges þou
20 thy self aperceyuyt wel / of what wyht they ben/ /but for as mochel
as the knowinge of these thinges / is a manere porcion of the medicine
of the / al be it so þat I haue lytel tyme to don it / yit natheles I
wol enforcen me to shewe somewhat of it/ /but al thogh the norys-
24 ynges of dite of musike deliteth the/ /þou most suffren *and* for-beryn
a litel of thilke delite / wyle þat I weue² to þe resouns yknyt by
ordre/ /as it liketh to þe *quod* I so do/ /So spak she ryht as by
another bygynnyng *and* seyde thus/ /the engendrynge of alle thingis
28 *quod* she / *and* alle the progression of Muable nature / *and* al þat
moeueth in any manere taketh his causes / his ordre / *and* his formys /
of the stablenesse of the dyuine thowght / *and* thilke deuyne
thowht þat is yset *and* put in the towr/ /þat is to seyn in the heyhte
32 of the symplicite of god / stablyssyth many manere gyses to thinges /
þat ben to done / the whiche manere / whan þat men looken it / in

¹ leaf 139, back.

² gloss : *contexo*.

thilke pure klenesse of the diuine intelligence / it is yclepyd
puruyaunce / but whan thilke manere is referred by men / to thinges
þat it moueth *and* disponith / thanne of olde men it was clepyd
destyne/ /the whiche thinges¹ / yif þat any wyht looketh wel in his 4
thowht / the strengthe of þat oon *and* of þat oother / he shal lyhtly
mowen sen / þat thise two thinges ben diuerse/ /for puruyaunce is
thilke deuyne reson / þat is enstablysshed / in the souereyn prynce
of thinges / the whiche puruyan^{ce} disponith alle thinges/ /but 8
destine is the disposicion *and* ordinaunce clyuynge to moeuable
thinges / by the whiche disposicion / the puruyaunce knytteth alle
thinges in hir ordres/ /for puruyan^{ce} embraceth alle thinges to hepe /
al thogh þat they ben diuerse / *and* al thowgh they ben Infynyte/ 12
/but destyne departeth *and* ordeynyth alle thinges / syngulerly
and dyuydyd / in moeuynge / in places in formes / in tymes as
thus/ /lat the vnfoldinge of temporel ordynaunce / assemblyd / *and*
oonyd / in the lookynge of the dyuyne thowt/ /is puruyaunce// 16
and thilke same ²assemblynge / & oonynge deuyded *and* vnfolden
by tymes / lat þat ben called destyne/ /*and* al be it so þat thise
thinges ben diuerse / yit natheles hangith þat oon of þat oother//
for why the ordyr destynal procedith of the symplycite of puruy- 20
aunce/ /for ryht as werkman þat aperceyuyth in his thoght the forme
of the thing þat he wol make / *and* moeueth the effect of the werk /
and ledith þat he hadde lokyd by-forn in his thowht / symplely /
and presently / by temporel ordinance/ /certes ryht so god dispo- 24
nith in his puruyaunce syngulerly *and* stablely / the thinges þat
ben to done/ /but he amynstryth in many maneres *and* in diuerse
tymys by destyne/ /thilke same thynges þat³ he hath desponed/
thanne weyther þat destyn[e]⁴ be excercysed owther by some dyuyne 28
spyritz *seruauntz* to the deuyne puruyaunce / or elles by som sowle⁵ /
or elles by alle nature *seruynge* to god / or elles by the celestial
moeuynge of sterres / or elles by vertu of angelys / or elles by the
diuerse subtylyte of deuelys / or elles by any of hem / or elles by 32
hem alle/ /the destinal ordynaunce is ywouen⁶ *and* a-complyssed/
/certes it is opyn thing þat the puruyaunce is an vnmoeuable / *and*

¹ gloss: .s. prudentia & fatum.² leaf 140.³ thynges þat by corrector.⁴ n by corrector.⁵ gloss: .i. anima mundi.⁶ gloss: .i. textitur.

symple forme of thinges to done/ *and* the moeuable bond / *and* the
temporel ordynaunce of thinges / whiche þat the deuyne symplycite
of puryaunce / hath ordeynyd to done / þat is destine/ *for* which it
4 is¹ / þat alle thinges þat ben put vndyr destyne / ben certes subgit² to
poruyaunce / to whiche puruyaunce destyne it self is subgit *and*
vndyr/ *but* some thinges ben put vndyr puruyaunce þat surmownten
the ordynaunce of destyne / *and* tho ben thilke þat stablely ben y-
8 fechched negh to the fyrste godhed / they sormownten the ordre of
destynal moeuablete/ *for* ryht as of cercles þat tornen a-bowte a same
centre / or a-bowte ²a poynte/ *thilke* cercle þat is innerest / or most
with Inne / ioyneth to the symplese of the Myddel / *and* is as it
12 weere a centre or a poynt to þat oother cercles / þat tornen a-bowten
hym/ *And* thilke þat is owtterest compased / by a large enuyronnyng /
is vnfolden by largere spaces / in so moche as it is fertherest³ fro the
myddele symplite of the poynt/ *and* yif ther be any thing þat
16 knytteth *and* felawshippith hym self to thilke myddel poynt/ *it* is
constreynyd in to symplite / þat is to seyn in to vnmoeuablete / *and*
it cesith to ben shad *and* to fletyn diuersely/ *ryht* so by semblable
reson thilke thing þat departeth fyrthest fro the fyrst thowht of god /
20 it is vnfolden *and* summytted to gettere bondes of destyne/ *and*
in so moche is the thing moore fre *and* laus fro destynye as it axeth /
and holdeth hym nere to thilke centre of thinges / þat is to seyn / god//
and yif the thing clyueth to the stydefastnesse of the thoght of god /
24 *and* be with-owte moeuynge/ *certes* it sormowntyth the necissite of
destyne/ *thanne* ryht swych comparyson as it is of skylynge⁴ to
vndyrstondynge⁵/ *and* of thing þat is engendryd / to thing þat is /
and of tyme to eternite / *and* of þe cerkle to the centre/ *ryht* so is
28 the ordre of moeuable destyne / to the stable symplycite of puruyaunce /
thilke ordynaunce moeueth the heuene / *and* the sterres / *and*
atempyryth the elymen³ to gydere amonges hem self / *and* trans-
formeth hem by entrechaungeable mutasion / *and* thilke same ordre
32 newith ayein alle thinges growynge *and* fallynge⁶ a-down / by sem-
blable progression⁷ of sedes / *and* of sexes/ *þat* is to seyn Male *and*
femele/ *and* this ilke ordre constreyneth the fortunys *and* the dedes

¹ gloss: quo sit. ² leaf 140, back. ³ ferthere alterd. ⁴ gloss: .i. ratiocinacio.

⁵ gloss: .i. intellection.

⁶ gloss: .i. accidencia.

⁷ gloss: .i. issu.

of men by a bond of causes / nat able to be vnbownde¹/ /the whiche
destynal causes / whan they passen owt fro the bygynnynges of the
vnmoeuable puruauce / it mot ²nedes be / þat they ne be nat
Mutable / *and* thus ben the thinges ful wel ygouerned/ /yif þat the 4
symplicite dwellynge in the dyuine thought shewith forth the ordre
of causes vnable to ben I-bowed³/ *and* this ordre constreynyth by
his propre stablete / the Moeuable thinges / or elles they sholden
fleten folylly/ /ffor which it is þat alle thingys semen to ben confus 8
and trowble to vs men/ /for we ne mowen nat considere thilke ordyn-
aunce/ /Natheles the propre manere of euery thing dressinge hem
to goode dispoynith hem alle / for ther nis no thing don for cause of
yuel / ne thilke thing þat is don by wykkede folk / nis nat don for 12
yuel/ /the wheche shrewes as I haue shewyd ful plentiously seken
good/ /but wykked errour mystorneth hem / ne the ordre comynge
fro þe poynt of souereyn good / ne declynyth nat fro his bygynnyng/ /
but þou mayst seyn what vnreste may ben a worse confusion / than 16
þat goode men han somtyme aduersite / *and* somtyme prosperite/
/and shrewes also han now thinges þat they desiren *and* now thinges
þat they haten/ / wheyther men lyuen now in swych hoolnesse of
thowht / as who seyth / ben men now so wyse / þat swyche folk as 20
they demen to ben good folk or shrewes / þat it moste nedes ben
that folk ben swyche as they wenen/ /but in this manere the domes
of men discorden / þat thilke men þat some folk demen / worthy
of mede / oother folk demen hem worthy of torment/ /but lat vs 24
graunte / I pose that som man may wel demen or knowen the goode
folk *and* the badde/ /may he thanne knowen *and* sen thilke Inneryste
a-tempraunce of corages / as it hath ben wont to ben seyde of
bodies/ /as who seyth / may a man spekyn *and* determinen of a- 28
tempraunces in corages / as men weere wont to demen or spekyn of
complexionis *and* a-tempraunces of bodies⁴/ /ne it ne is nat an vn-lyk
myracle to hem þat ne knowen it nat/ /as who seyth / ⁵but it is lik
a merueyle or myracle to hem þat ne knowen it nat / why that swete 32
thinges ben couenable to some bodies þat ben hool / & to some
bodies bittere thinges ben couenable / *and* also why þat some syke

¹ gloss : i. indissolubile.² leaf 141.³ gloss : i. indeclinabile.⁴ gloss : quia dicitur non.⁵ leaf 141, back.

folk' ben holpen *with* lyhte medicynes / *and* some folk' ben holpen
with sharppe medicynes/ /but natheles the leche þat knowith the
manere / *and* the atemprance of hele and of maledye ne merueylith of
4 it nothing/ /but what oother thing semith hele of corages but bownte
and prowesse / *and* what other thing semyth maledye of corage but
vices/ /who is ellis kepere of good or dryuere a-wey of yuel/ /but god
gouernour *and* lechere of thowhtes/ /the wheche god whan he hath
8 by-holden from the heye toure¹ of his purueaunce / he knowith what
is cou^enable to euery wyht/ /*and* leueth hem þat he wot þat is
cou^enable to hem/ /lo her-of comth *and* her-of is don this noble
myracle of the ordre destynal / whan god þat al knowith doth swyche
12 thing of which thing' þat vnknowynge folk' ben astoned/ /but for to
constreine as who seyth / but for to comprehend *and* telle a fewe
thinges of the deuyne depnesse / the whiche þat mannes resoun may
vndirstonde/ / /thilke man þat þou wenest to ben ryht Iuste *and* ryht
16 kepynge of equite / the contrarye of þat semyth to the deuyne
purueaunce þat al wot/ / *and* lukan my famyler telleth that the
victories cawse lykede to the goddes/ /*and* the cause ouercomen
lykede to caton/ /thane what so euere þou mayst sen þat is don in
20 this world vnhoped / or vnwenyd / certes it is the ryhte ordre of
thinges/ /but as to thy wykkede opynyon/ /it is a confusion/ /but .I.
sopose that som man be so wel I-thewed þat the deuyne Iugement
and the Iugement^t of mankynde acorden hem to-gydere of hym / but
24 he is vnstydefast of corage / þat yif any aduersite come to hym he
wol foreletyn *par* auenture to continue Innocence / by the whiche he
ne may nat withholden ³fortune/ /thane the wyse dispensacion of
god / sparith hym⁴ the whiche man aduersite myhte enpeyren / for
28 þat god wol nat suffren hym to trauayle to whom þat trauayle nis nat
couenable / Anothir man is *parfyt* in alle vertus *and* is an holy man
and negh to god / so þat the puruaunce of god wolde demen / þat
it weere a felonye þat he weere towchid *with* any aduersites / so þat
32 he wol nat suffre þat swych a man be moeued *with* any bodyly
maledye/ /but so as seyde a phylosophre the moore excellent by me//
he seyde in grec / þat vertuus han edified the body of the holy man/

¹ gloss : i. spectacula. ²—² by a corrector. ³ leaf 142. ⁴ gloss : .s. man.

/and oftyme it bytydeth þat the somme of thinges þat ben to done is taken to gouerne to goode folk' /for þat the malyce haboundaunt of shrewes sholde ben abated/ /and god yeuith and departeth to oothre folk' prosperites and aduersites ymedled to hepe after the qualite of 4 hir corages / and remordith some folk' by aduersite / for they ne sholde nat wexen prowde / by longe welefulnesse/ /and oother folk' he suffreth to ben trauaylyd with harde thinges / for þat they sholden confermen the vertus of corages / by the vsage and excercitacion 8 of pacience / & oother folk' dredyn moore than they owhten the whiche they myhten wel beeryn / and thilke folk god ledith in to experience of hymself by aspre and sorwful thinges/ /and many oother folk' han bowht honourable renoun of this world by the prys of 12 the glorious deth/ /and som men þat ne mowen nat ben ouercomen by tormentz / han yeuen ensauple to othere folk' / þat vertu may nat ben ouercomyn by aduersitees / and of alle thinges ther nis no dowte / þat they ne ben don ryhtfully / and ordenely to the profyt 16 of hem / to whom we sen thise thinges bytyde/ /for certes þat aduersite comth som tyme to shrewes / and som tyme þat that they desiren it comth of thise forseide / cawses/ /and of sorwful thinges þat bytyden to shrewes / certes no man ne wondrith / for alle men 20 wenen þat they han wel deseruyd 'it' and þat they ben of wykkede meryte / of whiche shrewes the torment som tyme agastyth oother to don felonies / and som tyme it amendith hem þat suffren the tormentz// and the prosperite þat is yeuen to shrewes sheweth a gret argument 24 to goode folk' what thing they sholden demen of thilke welefulnesse / the whiche prosperite men sen ofte seruen to shrewes/ /In the which thing .I. trowe þat god dispensith for per auenture the nature of som man is so ouerthrowenge to yuel / and so vncouenable / þat 28 the nedy pouerte of his howshold myhte rather egren hym to don felonyes/ /and to the Maledie of hym god pittyth remedie to yeuen hym Rychesses / and som oother man byholdeth his conscience defowled with synnes / and makith comparison of his fortune and of 32 hym self / and dredith per auenture þat is blysfulnesse / of which the vsage is Ioyeful to hym / þat the leesyng of thilke blysfulnesse /

ne be nat sorwful to hym / *and* therfor he wol chaunge his maneres/
/ *and* for he dredith to leese his fortune / he forletith his wykked-
nesse/ /to oothre folk' is welefulnesse y-yeuen vnworthyly / the
4 wheche ouerthroweth hem in to distruccio) *pat* they han desseruyd/
/ *and* to som oothre folk is yeuen power' to punyssen / for *pat* it shal
be cause of *contumacion*) *and* excercisyng to goode folk' / *and* cause
of torment to shrewes/ /for so as ther nis non alyaunce by-twixe
8 goode folk' *and* shrewes / ne shrewes ne mowen nat acordy amonges
hem self / *and* why nat / for shrewes discorden of hem self by hire
vices / the whiche vices alto-Renden hir consciences / *and* don ofte
tyme thinges / the whiche thingis whan they han don hem / they
12 demen *pat* tho thingis ne sholden nat han ben don/ /ffor which
thing thilke souereyn *purueaunce* hath maked ofte tyme faire myracle /
so *pat* shrewes han maked shrewes to ben goode men / for whan *pat*
som shrewes sen *pat* they suffren / wrongfully felo'nyes of oother
16 shrewes / they wexen eschaufet in to hate of hem / *pat* anoyeden
hem / *and* retornen to the frut of vertu / whan they to ben vnlyk to
hem *pat* they han hated/ /Certes only this is the deuyne myht / to
the wheche myht. yuelis ben thanne goode / whan it vseth tho yuelis
couenably / *and* draweth owt the effect of any goode / as who seyth
pat yuel is good oonly to the myht of god/ /for the myht of god
20 ordeynith thilke yuel to good/ /for oon ordre enbrasith alle thinges /
so *pat* what wyht *pat* departeth fro the resoun of thilke ordre which
pat is assyngned to hym / algates yit he slydith in to a nother ordre/
/so *pat* no thing' nis leueful to folye in þe Reame of the deuyne *pur-*
24 uyaunce / as who seyth / nothing nis *with*-owten ordinaunce / in
the Reame of þe deuyne *puruyaunce* / syn *pat* the Ryht stronge god
gouernith alle thinges in this world/ /ffor it nis nat leueful to man to
comprehenden by wit / ne vnfolden by word / al the subtyl ordin-
28 aunces *and* disposicions of the deuyne entente/ /ffor oonly it owhte
suffise to han looked / *pat* god hym self makere of alle natures
ordeynyth *and* dressyth alle thinges to goode wyl *pat* he hasteth to
withholden the thinges *pat* he hath maked / in to his semblaunce /
32 *pat* is to seyn for to *with*holden thinges in to good / for he hym self

is good/ /he chasith owt al yuel fro the bowndes of his *communalyte* /
 by the ordre of necessite destynable/ /ffor which it folwith *pat* yif
 pou looke the *puruyaunce* ordeynynge the thinges *pat* men wenen
 ben *outraious* / or habowndant in Erthis/ /pou ne shalt nat sen in no 4
 place no thing of yuel/ /but I se now that pou art charged with the
 weyhte of the questyon/ /and weerey with the lengthe of my reson
 And that thou abydyest som swetnesse of songe / tak thanne this
 drawht / and whan pou art wel refreshed and relect / thou shal be 8
 moore stydefast to stye in to hegere questyouns/ /

¶ The syxte Metur [margin, leaf 144, back]

IF pou wys wilt demyn in thy pure thowht / the Ryhtes or the
 lawes of the heye thonderere / *pat* is to seyn of god/ /loke pou
 and byhold the heyhtes of the souereyn heuene/ /there kepyn 12
 the sterres by ryhtful alliaunce of thinges hyr olde pees/ /the
 sonne I-moeued by his rody ffyr ne distorbeth nat the colde clerke
 of the Moene/ /ne the sterre Iclepyd the bere¹ / *pat* enclynyth his
 rauyssynge cours abowten the souereyn heyhte of the worlde/ /ne the 16
 same sterre vrsa nis neuer mo wasshen in the depe westrene see/
 ne coueyth nat to deeyn² his flaumes in the see of the occian / al
 thogh he³ se oothre sterres I-plownged in the see/ /and hesperus the
 sterre bodith and tellith alwey the late nyhtes/ /and lucifer the sterre 20
 bryngeth ayein the cleere day/ /and thus maketh loue entrechaunge-
 able the perdurable courses/ /and thus is discordable batayle I-put
 owt of the contre of þ^e sterres/ /this acordaunce atemprith by euenelyk
 maneres the elymentz / *pat* the moyste thinges stryuyng with the 24
 drye thinges / yeuen place by stowndes/ /& the colde thinges Ioynen
 hem by feyth to the hote thinges / and that the lyhte fyr arysith in
 to heyhte / and the heuy erthes aualen by hyr weyhtes/ /by thise
 same causes the flowry 3er^e yildeth swote smelles in the fyrste somer 28
⁴seson warmynge/ /and the hote somer dryeth the cornes / and
 autumpne comth ayein heuy of applis / and the fletynge reyn by-
 dewith⁵ the wynter / this atempraunce norissith and bryngeth forth
 alle thing *pat* berith lyf in this world / And thilke same atemprance 32

¹ gloss: .i. vrsa.

² gloss: .i. tingere.

³ gloss: i. stella.

⁴ leaf 145.

⁵ gloss: .i. irrigat.

rauyssynge hidith *and* by-nymith / & drenchith vndir the laste deth
 alle thinges I-born / Amonges thise thinges sitteth the heye makere /
 kyng / *and* lord / welle *and* bygynnyng / lawe *and* wys Iuge / to
 4 don equite / *and* gouerneth *and* enclynith the brydlis of thinges / *and*
 tho thinges þat he sterith to gon by moeuyng / he witdrawith *and*
 arestith *and* affermeth moeuable or wandryng thinges / ffor yif þat
 he ne klepede nat ayein the ryht goyng of thinges / *and* yif þat he
 8 ne constreynede hem nat eft sones in to Rowndnesses enclynede the
 thinges þat ben now continued by stable ordinaunce / they sholden
 departen from hir welle / þat is to seyn from hir bygyng / *and*
 faylen / þat is to seyn torne in to nowht / this is the comune loue to
 12 alle thinges / *and* alle thinges axen to ben holden by the fyn of good /
 for elles ne myhten they nat lasten / yif they ne come nat eft sones
 ayein by loue returned to the cause þat hath yeuen hem beyng / þat
 is to seyn to god / /

¶ The seuende prose [*margin, leaf 146, back*].

16 **S** Estow nat thanne / what thinge folweth alle the thinges þat I
 haue seyð / what thing *quod* I / Certes *quod* she al owtrely /
 þat alle fortune is good / *and* how may þat be *quod* I / now
 vndirstand *quod* she / so as alle fortune wheyther so it be
 20 Ioyeful fortune / or aspre fortune / is yeuen eyther by cause of ger-
 donyng / or ellys of excersisinge of good folk / or ellis by cause to
 punnyssen / or elles chastysen shrewes / thanne is alle fortune good /
 the whiche fortune is certeyn / þat it be eyther ryhtful / or elles pro-
 24 fitable / forsothe this is a ful verray reson *quod* I / *and* yif I con-
 sider the puruyance / *and* the destyne / þat þou tawhtest me a lytel
 her byform / this sentence is sustenyd by stydefast resouns / but yif
 it lyke vnto the / lat vs nowmbren hem amonges thilke thinges / of
 28 whiche þou seydist a litel her byform that þey ne weere nat able to
 ben weened to þe poeple / why so *quod* she / for þat the comune word of
 men *quod* .I. mys-vseth this manere speche of fortune / *and* seyn ofte
 tymes þat the fortune of som wyht is wykkede / wyltow thanne *quod*
 32 she þat .I. aproche a lytel to the wordes of the poeple / so þat it

seme nat to hem þat I be ouermochē departed as fro the vsage of
man-kynde/ /as þou wolt quod I/ /demestow nat quod she that alle
thing þat profitith is good/ /yis quod I/ /and certes thilke thing that
excersisith / or corigit profitith/ /I confesse it wel quod I/ /thanne 4
is it good quod she/ /why nat quod I/ /but this is the fortune
quod she of hem þat eyther ben put in vertu and bataylen ayeins
aspre thingis / or elles of hem þat eschwen and deelynē fro vices /
and taken the wey of vertu/ /this ne may I nat denye quod I/ /but 8
what seystow of the myrre fortune / þat is yeuen to good folk/ /in
gerdoun / demyth awht the poeple þat it is wykked/ /nay forsothe
quod I/ /but they demyn as it soth is / þat it is ryht good/ /and what
seystow of þat oother fortune quod she / þat al thogh þat it be aspre / 12
and restreynith the shrewes by ryhtful torment / weenith awht the
poeple þat it be good/ /nay quod I/ /but the poeple demyth þat it is
most wreched of alle thinges þat may ben thoght/ /war now and
loke wel quod she lest þat we in folwyngē the opynyon of the poeple / 16
haue confessyd and concludyd thing þat is vnable to ben weened to
the poeple/ /what is that quod I/ /Certes quod she it folwith or comth
of thinges þat ben graunted / þat alle fortune what so euer it be / of
hem þat ben eyther in possession of vertu / or in the ences of vertu / 20
or elles in the purchasyngē of vertu / þat thilke fortune is good //
and that alle fortune is ryht wykkede to hem þat dwellyn in
shrewednesse/ /as who seyth / and thus weenith nat the poeple/ /that
is soth quod I/ /al be it so þat no man dar confesse it / ne by-knowen 24
it/ /why so quod she/ /for ryht as the stronge man / ne semyth nat
to abayssen¹ or disdaignen as ofte tyme as he herith the noyse of þe
batayle/ /ne also it ne semyth nat to þe wyse man to beeryn it
greuously as ofte as he is lad in to the stryf of fortune/ /for bothe to 28
þat oon man and ek to þat oother thilke difficulte is the matere / to
þat oon man of ences of his glorios renoun / and to þat oother man to
conferme his sapience / þat is to seyn to the asprenesse of his estat/
/for þerfore is it called vertu / for þat it sustenith and enforseth by 32
hise strengthis þat it nis nat ouercomyn by aduersitees/ /ne certes þou
þat art put in the ences or in the heyhte of vertu / ne hast nat

¹ leaf 147, back.

comyn to fletyn *with* delices / *and* for to wellen in bodely luste/ /thow
 sowest or plawntest a ful egre batayle in thy corage ayenis euery
 fortune/ /for þat the sorwful fortune ne confownde the nat / ne þat
 4 the merye fortune ne corumpe the nat/ /Ocupye the Meene by styde-
 fast strengthes/ /for al þat euer is vndir the Meene / or elles al þat
 ouerpasith the Meene despisith welefulnesse/ /as who seyth it is
 vicious / *and* ne hath no Meede of his traunyle/ /for it is set in yowre
 8 hand / as who seyth it lith in yowre powere / what fortune yow is
 leuest/ /þat is to seyn good or yuel/ /for alle fortune þat semyth sharp
 or aspre / yif it ne excersyse nat the good folk / ne chastiseth the
 wykked folk / it punysseth

¶ The seuende Metur [margin, leaf 148, back]

- 12 **T**He wrekere attrides / þat is to seyn Agamenon / þat wrowhte
and continuede the batayles by .X. ȝer recouered *and* purgede
 in wrekyng by the destrucsyon of troye/ /the loste chaum-
 brys of maryaage of his brothir/ /this is to seyn þat he
 16 Agamenon wan ayein Elyne þat was Menelaus wyf his brother/ /In
 the mene while þat thilke Agamenon desirede to yeuyn sayles to the
 grekyssh nauye / *and* bowhte ayein the wyndes / by blod/ /he
 vnclothede hym of pyte of fadyr/ /*and* the sory preest yeuith in
 20 sacryfyng the wrechched kuttinge of throte of the dowhter/ /þat is
 to seyn þat Agamenon let kuttyn the throte of his dowhter¹ by the
 preest to maken allyaunce *with* his goddes / *and* for to han wynde
with whiche he myhte wenden to troye/ /ytakus þat is to seyn vlixes
 24 by-wepte his felawes ylorn / the whiche felawes the feerse poliphemus
 liggyng in his grete caue hadde fretyn / *and* dreynt in his empty
 wombe/ /but natheles poliphemus wood for his blynde visage / yald to
 vlixes Ioye by his sorwful teeres / this is to seyn þat vlixes smot owt the
 28 eye of poliphemus / þat stood in his forehed / for whiche vlixes hadde
 Ioye / whan he say poliphemus wepyng *and* blynde/ /hercules is cele-
 brable for his harde²traunyles / he dawntede the prowde centauris half
 hors half man / *and* he byrafte the dispoilyng from the crwel lyon /
 32 þat is to seyn he³ slowh the lyon *and* rafte hym his skyn/ /he smot the

¹ gloss: .s. ephigeniam.² leaf 149.³ gloss: .s. hercules.

brydys þat hyhten arpiis¹ with certeyn arwys / he rauysshede applis fro
the wakyng dragown / and his hand was the moore heuy for the goldene
metal / he drowh cerberus the hownd of helle by his treble cheyne//
he ouercome as it is sayd hath put an vnmeke lord foddre to his 4
crwel hors / this to seyn þat hercules slowgh dyomedes / and made
his hors to freten hym / and he ercules slowgh Idra the serpent and
brende the venym/ and achelows the flood defowlede in his for-
hed dreynte his shamefast visage in his strondes/ /this to seyn þat 8
achelous koude transfigure hym self in to diuerse lyknesses / and as
he fawht with erkules at the laste he tornede hym in to a bole / and
hercules brak of oon of hise hornes / and he² for shame hidde hym
in his ryuer/ and he Ercules cast adown antheus the gyaunt in the 12
strondes of lybye / and kacus apaysede the wraththes of enander/
/this to to seyn þat hercules slowgh the monstre kacus and apaysede
with þat deth the wraththe of enander/ and the brysteled boor
markede with scomes the shuldres of herkules/ /the whiche sholdres 16
the heye clerke of heuene sholde thriste/ and the laste of his laborus
was þat he sustenyd the heuene vp on his nekke vnbowed³/ and he
deseruede ofte sones the heuene to ben the prys of his laste trauayle/
/goth now thanne ye stronge men ther as the heye way of the grete 20
ensaumple ledith yow/ /O nyce men why nake ye yowre backes/ /as
who seyth. O ye slowe and delicat men / why flee ye aduersytes /
and ne fyhten nat ayenis hem by vertu to wynnen the Mede of the
heuene/ /ffor the erthe ouercomyn 4yeuith sterres/ /this to seyn / þat 24
whan þat erthely lust is ouercomyn /a man is makd worthy to the
heuene

¶ The fyrste prose [*margin, leaf 151*]

He hadde seyð and torned by cours of hir reson to some oothre
things to ben tretyd and to ben ysped/ /thanne seyde I/
/Certes ryhtful is thin amonestynge / and ful digne by 28
S autorite but þat þou seydist whilom þat the questyon of thy
dyuyne puruiaunce is enlaced with many oother questionys / I vndir-
stonde wel and proeue it by the same thing/ /but I axe yif þat þou
wenest þat hap be any thing in any weys/ and yif þou weenest þat hap 32

¹ gloss: in þe palude of lynne.

² gloss: s. Achelous.

³ gloss: i. inreflexe.

⁴ leaf 149, back.

be any thing / what it is / *thanne quod* she I haste me to yilden *and*
 assylen to the dette of my byhest / *and* to shewen *and* openen the
 wey / by which wey þou mayst come ayein to thy contre / *but* al be
 4 it so / *þat* the thinges which *þat* þou axest ben ryht profitable to
 knowe / *and* yit ben they diuerse somewhat fro the paath of my purpos /
and it is to dowten *þat* þou ne be maked weery by mys weyes / so
þat þou ne mayst nat suffice to mesuren the ryht wey / *ne* dowte the
 8 ther-of nothing *quod* I / *ffor* for to knowen thilke thinges to-gedere /
 in the whiche thinges I delite me gretly / *þat* shal ben to me in
 styde of reste / syn it nis nat to dowten of the thinges folwinge /
 whan euery syde of thy disputacion shal han ben stydefast to me by
 12 vndowntous feyth / *thanne seyde* she / *þat* manere wol I don the /
 & bygan to speken ryht thus / *Certes quod* ¹she yif any wyht def-
 fenysse hap in this manere *þat* is to seyng / hap is bytydyng² I-
 browht forth by foolissh moeuyng / *and* by no knettyng of causes /
 16 /I. conferme *þat* hap nis ryht nawht in no wyse / *and* I. deme al
 owtrely / *þat* hap nis ne dwelleth but a voyce / as who seyth but an
 Idel word / *with*-owten any sygnificacion of thing submitted to *þat*
 vois / for what place myhte ben lefte or dwellyng to folye *and* to
 20 disordenaunce / syn *þat* god ledith *and* constreynyth alle thinges by
 ordre / *for* this sentence is verray *and* soth *þat* nothing ne hath his
 beyng of nawht / to the whiche sentence none of these olde folk ne
with-seyde neuere / al be it so *þat* they ne vndirstondyn ne meneden
 24 it nawht by god prince *and* bygynner of werkynge / *but* they
 casten as a manere fowndement of subiect material / *þat* is to seyn of
 the nature of alle resoun / *and* yif *þat* any thing is woxen or comyn
 of no cawses / *thanne* shal it seme *þat* thilke thing is comyn or woxen
 28 of nawht / but this ne may nat ben don / *thanne* is it nat possible /
þat hap be any swych thing as I have diffynyshed a lytel her byforn /
 /how shal it *thanne* be *quod* I / *nys* ther *thanne* no thing *þat* by ryht
 may be clepyd / eyther hap or ellis auenture of fortune / ar is ther
 32 awht / al be it so *þat* it is hidd fro the poeple to which these wordes
 ben conuenable / *Myn Arystotulis quod* she / in the book of his phisik
 diffynyssheth this thing by short reson / *and* nehg to the sothe / *In*

¹ leaf 151, back.

² gloss: .i. euentum.

which manere *quod* I/ /as ofte *quod* she as men don any thing for grace
 of any oother thing/ /and an oother thing than thilke thing þat men
 entenden to don / by-tydith by some causes / it is clepyd hap/ /Ryht
 as a man dalf the Erthe by cause to tylyinge of the feeld / & fownde 4
 there a gobet of gold by-doluen/ /thanne weenen folk / þat it is byfalle
 by fortunows bytydyngē/ /but for sothe it nis nat of nawht / for it hath
 hise propre ¹causes of whise causes / the cours vnforeseyn and vnwar
 semyth to han maked hap / for yif the tylyere of the feld ne dolue nat 8
 in the Erthe and yif the hydere of þe gold / ne hadde hidde the gold
 in thilke place/ the gold ne hadde nat ben fownde / thise ben thanne
 the causes of the a-briggyngē of fortuit hap / the which abreggyngē
 of fortuit hap comth of causes encowntryngē and flowyngē to-gydere 12
 to hem self / and nat by the entencion of the doere / for neyther the
 hidere of the gold / ne the deluere of the feeld / ne vndirstoden nat
 þat the gold sholde han ben fownde/ /but as I sayde it bytydde / and
 ran to-gydere þat he dalf there as þat oother hadde hyd the gold/ 16
 /now may I thus diffynysse hap/ /hap is an vnwar bytydyngē of
 causes assembled in thingis þat ben don for som oother thing but
 thilke ordre procedyngē / by an vn-eschuable byndyngē to-gydere /
 which þat descendith fro the welle of puruyaunce / þat ordeynyth 20
 alle thinges / in hir places / and in hir tymes / maketh þat the
 causes rennen and assemblyn to gydere /

¶ The fyrste Metur [*margin, leaf 152, back*]

Tigris and eufrates resoluen and spryngen of oo welle in the
 kragges of the Roche of the contre of a-chemenie / ther as the 24
 fleyngē batayle ficheth hir dartes retorned in the brestis
 of hem þat folwen hem/ /and soone after tho same Ryueres
 tigris and eufrates/ vnloynen and departen hir wateres and yif they
 comyn to-gyderes / & ben assembled and clepyd to-gydere in-to 28
 o cours / thanne moten thilke thinges fletyn to-gydere / which þat
 the water of the entrechaungyngē² flod bringith the shippes / & the
 stokkes arraced with the flood moten assemblyn / and the wateres .I.
 medlyd wrappith³ or implieth many fortunel happis or maneres/ /te 32

¹ leaf 152.

² gloss: .i. alterni.

³ gloss: .i. implicat.

whiche wandrynge happes natheles / thilke declynyng¹ lownesse of
the erthe / *and* the flowinge ordre of the slydyng whater gouernith /
ryht so fortune þat semyth as þat it fletith wth slaked or vn-
4 gouernede brydles / it suffreth brydles / þat is to seyn to ben gouerned /
/ *and* passeth by thilke lawe / þat is to seyn by thilke deuyne
ordenance

¶ The 2^{de} prose [margin, leaf 153, back]

8 **T**His vndirstonde .I. wel / *and* I acorde me þat it is ryht as
þou seyst / /but I axe yif ther be any liberte of fre wil in
this orde of causes / þat clyuen thus to-gidere in hym self /
/or elles .I. wolde witen yif þat the destynal cheyne con-
streynith the mouynges of the corages of men / /*vis quod* she ther is
12 liberte of free wil / /ne ther ne was neuere no nature of reson / þat it
ne hadde liberte of ffree wil / /for euery thing þat may natureli vsen
reson / it hath doom by which it decernith *and* demyth euery thing /
þanne knoweth it by it self thinges þat ben to fleen *and* thinges þat
16 ben to desiren / *and* thilke thing þat any wyht demyth to ben desired /
þat axeth or desireth he / *and* fleeth thilke thing þat he troweth to
ben fleen / /wherfore in alle thinges þat reson is / in hem also is
liberte of wyllynge / *and* of nyllynge / /but .I. ne ordeyne nat as who
20 seyht / I ne graunte nat / þat this liberte beeuene lyk in alle thinges
/for why in the souereynes dyuynes substaunces / þat is to seyn in
spiritz / Iugement is moore cleere / *and* wil nat .I. coromped / *and*
myht redy to spedyn thinges þat ben desired / /but the sowles of
24 men moten needes be moore free / /whan they looken hem in the
speculacion / or lookyng of the deuyne thoght / /*& lasse* ²free whan
they slyden in to the bodies / *and* yit lasse free whan they ben
gaderyd to-gidere *and* comprehendyd in erthely membris / but the
28 laste seruage is / whan þat they ben yeuen to vices / *and* han yfalle
from the possession / of hir propre reson / /for after þat they han cast
away hir eyen fro the lyht of the souereyn sothfastnesse to lowe thinges
and derke / /Anon they derkin by the clowdes of ignorance / *and* ben
32 trowblyd by felonos talentz / to whiche talentz / whan they aprochen
and asenten / thei hepin *and* encreisin the seruage / which they han

¹ gloss: decliuitas.

² leaf 154.

Ioyned to hem self / *and* in this manere they ben kaytyfs fro hir
 propre liberte / the whiche thinges natheles / the lookynge of the
 deuyne puruyaunce seth / *pat* alle thinges byholdith *and* seth fro
 eterne / *and* ordeynith hem euerych in hir merites / as they ben 4
 predestynat / *and* it is seyde in grek / *pat* alle thinges he seth *and*
 alle thinges he herith

¶ The .2.^{de} Metur [*margin, leaf 154, back*]

Homer with the hony Mowth / *pat* is to seyn / Homer with
 the swete dities / syngith / *pat* the sonne is cleer by pure 8
 lyht / *natheles* yit ne may it nat by the Infirme lyht of
 his beemes / brekyn or percen / the inward entrailes of
 the erthe / or elles of the see / so ne seth nat god makere of the grete
 world / to hym *pat* looketh alle thinges from an hegh ne withstondith 12
 no thinges by heynesse of herthe / *ne* the nyht ne withstondith nat
 to hym by the blake klowdes / *thilke* god seeth in oo strokk¹ of
 thoght / alle thinges *pat* ben / or weeren / or shollen comyn / *and*
thilke god for he loketh *and* seth alle thinges alone / *thow* mayst seyn 16
pat he is the verray sonne

¶ The .3.^{de} prose [*margin, leaf 157, back*]

THanne seyde .I. now am I confownded by a moore hard
 dowte than I / *was* / *what* dowte is *pat* *quod* she / *for* certes
 I coniecte now / by whiche thinges *pou* art trowbled / *it* 20
semyth *quod* I to repugnyn *and* to contraryen gretly / *pat*
 god knowit byforn alle thinges / *and* *pat* ther is any freedom of
 liberte / *for* yif so be *pat* god looketh alle thinges byforn / *ne* god ne
 may nat ben desseyuyd in no manere / than mot it nedes ben / *pat* 24
 alle thinges by-tyden / the whiche *pat* the puruyaunce of god hath
 seyn byforn to comyn / *for* which yif *pat* god knowith byforn / nat
 oonly the werkes of men / but also hir conseyles *and* hir willes /
 thanne ne shal ther be no liberte of arbitre / *ne* certes ther ne may 28
 be noon oother dede / *ne* no wil but *thilke* / which *pat* the deuyne
 puruyaunce *pat* ne may nat ben desseyuyd hath feelyd byforn / *for*
 yif *pat* they myhten wrythen away in oothre manere / than they ben

¹ gloss: i. ictu

purueyed/ /thanne sholde ther be no stydefast prescience of thing to
 comyn // but rather an vncerteyn opynyon/ /the whiche thing ¹to
 trowen of god I deme it felonye and vnleueful/ /ne I ne proeue nat
 4 thilke same reson as who seyth/ /I ne alowe nat or I ne preyse nat
 thilke same reson/ / by which þat som men weenen þat they mowen
 assoylen and vnknyttē the knotte of this question/ / for certes they
 seyn þat thing nis nat to comyn / for þat the puruyaunce of god
 8 hath seyn byforn þat is to comyn / but² rather the contrarye / and
 þat this/ /þat for þat the thing is to comyn therfore ne may it nat
 ben hidde fro the puruyaunce of god/ /and in this manere this
 necessite slydith ayein in to the contrarye partye/ /ne it ne by-houeth
 12 nat nedes þat thinges bytyden / þat ben puruyed/ /but it by-houeth
 nedes / þat thinges þat ben to comyn ben yporueyid/ /but as it weers
 ytrauayled / as who seyth þat thilke answers procedith ryht as thogh
 men trauayleden / or weeren bysy to enqueren / the whiche thing is
 16 cause of the whiche thing / as weyther the prescience is cause of the
 necessite of thinges to comyn / or elles þat the necessite of thinges to
 comyn is cause of the puruyaunce³/ /but I ne enforce me nat now to
 shewen it⁴ / þat the bytydinge of thinges I wist byforn is necessarie//
 20 how so or in what manere/ /þat the ordre of causes hath it self/ /al
 thogh þat it ne seme nat / þat the prescience bringe in necessite of
 bytydinge to thinges to comyn/ /for certes yif þat any wyht sitteth /
 it bi-houyth by necessite þat the opinion be soth of hym þat coniect-
 24 eth þat he sitteth/ /and ayeinward also is it of the contrarye/ /yif the
 opynyon be soth of any wyht / for þat he sitteth/ /it by-houyth by
 necessite þat he sitte/ /thanne is heere necessite in þat oon and in þat
 oother / for in þat oon is necessite of sittynge / and certes in þat
 28 oother is necessite of sooth/ /but therfore ne sittith nat a wyht / for
 þat the opynyon of the sittynge is soth/ /but the opynyon is rather
 sooth for þat a wyht ⁵sitteth by-forn/ /and thus al thogh / þat the
 cause of the sooth com⁶th of þat other syde/ /as who seith þat al thogh
 32 þe cause of soth com⁶th of þe sittynge and nat of thee trewe opynyon/ /
 Algates yit is there comune necessite in þat on and in þat oother//
 thus shewith it þat I may make semblable skyles / of the puruy-

¹ leaf 158.² gloss: .s. aiunt.³ gloss: .s. providencie.⁴ gloss: illud.⁵ leaf 158, back.⁶—⁶ by corrector.

aunce of god / *and* of thinges to comyn / for al thowh þat for þat
 thinges ben comyn ther-fore ben they purueyid / nat certes for
 they ben purueyid ther-fore ne bytyde they nat / yit natheles by-
 houth it by necessite / þat eyther the thinges to comyn ben 4
 ypurueyid of god / or elles þat the thinges þat ben purueyid of god
 bytyden¹ / *and* this thing only suffiseth ynowh to destroyen the
 freedom of owre arbitre / þat is to seyn of owre free wil / *but* now
 certes shewith it wel / how fer fro the sothe / *and* how vp so down² 8
 is this thing / þat we seyn þat the bytydyng of temporel thinges is
 cause of the eterne prescience / *but* for to wenyn / þat god puruyeth
 the thinges to comyn for they ben to comyn / *what* oother thing is
 it but for to weene / þat thilke thinges þat bytydden / whilom / ben 12
 causes of thilke souereyn puruyaunce / þat is in god / *and* her-to
 I adde yit this thing / þat ryht as whan þat I wot þat a thing is /
 it by-houth by necessite þat thilke selue thing be / *and* ek whan I
 haue knowe þat any thing shal bytyden so by-houth it by necessite 16
 þat thilke same thing bytyde / so folweth it thanne / þat the bytyd-
 yng of the thing / .I. wist byform ne may nat ben eschwed / *and*
 at the laste³ yif þat any wyht weene a thing to ben oother weyes
 thanne it is / *it* is nat ononly vnscience / but it is deceynable opynyon / 20
 ful diuerse *and* fer fro the soothe of science / *wherefore* yif any thing
 be so to comyn / so þat the bytydyng of hit ne be nat certeyn ne
 necessarye / *who* may wetyn byform þat thilke thing is to comyn //
 for ryht as scyence ne may nat ben Medlyd / wit falsnesse / as who 24
 seyth / þat yif y wot a thing / it ne may nat be false þat⁴ I ne wot it /
 ryht so thilke thing⁵ þat is conseyuyd by science / ne may nat ben
 non oother weys thanne as it is conceyuyd / *ffor* þat is the cause whi
 þat science wantith lesing / *as* who seyth whi þat witynge ne reseuyth 28
 nat leesinge of þat it wot / *ffor* it by-houth by necessite þat euery
 thing be ryht as science *comprehendith* it to be / *what* shal I thanne
 seyn / In which manere knowith god byform the thinges to comyn /
 yif they ne be nat certeyn / for yif þat he⁶ deme þat they⁶ ben to 32
 comyn / vneshwably⁷ / *and* so may be þat it is possyble / þat they

¹ gloss : .s. by necessite.

² gloss : ppostere.

³ gloss : .i. postremo. ⁴ leaf 159.

⁵ gloss : .s. deus.

⁶ gloss : .s. thynges.

⁷ gloss : .i. memorabiliter.

ne shollen nat comyn god is desseyuyd/ /but nat oonly to trowen
 þat god is desseyuyd / but for to speke it wit Mowth it is a
 felonos synne/ /but yif þat god wot þat ryht so as thinges ben
 4 to comyn so shullyn they comyn/ /so þat he wite egaly / as
 who seyth indifferently þat thinges mowen ben doon or elles nat
 ydoon/ /what is thilke prescience þat ne comprehendith no certeyn
 thing ne staable / Or elles what difference is ther bytwixe the pre-
 8 science / and thilke Iape worthi¹ dyuynenge of tyresye the dyuynor /
 þat seyde/ /al þat I seye *quod* he / eythir it shal be / or elles it ne
 shal nat be / or elles how mochel is worth the dyuyn prescience
 moore than the opynyon of man-kynde / yif so be þat it demyth the
 12 thinges vncerteyn as men doon/ /Of the whiche domus of men the
 bytydyng is nat certeyn But yif so be þat non vncerteyn thing ne
 may ben in hym / þat is ryht certeyn welle of alle thinges / thanne is
 the bytydyng certeyn of thilke thinges / whiche he² hath wist byforn
 16 fermely³ to comyn/ /for which hit folweth that the freedom of the
 conseyles *and* of the werkes of man-kynd nis non / syn þat the thoght
 of god þat seth alle thinges *with-owten* errowr of falsnesse / byndeth
 and ⁴constreynith hem to a bytydyng by necessite/ /*and* yif this
 20 thing be oonis ygraunted *and* resseyuyd / þat is to seyn þat ther
 nis no free wille/ /than she with it wel / how gret destruccyon⁵ /*and* /
⁶how grete damages ther folwen of thinges of mankynde/ /ffor in
 ydel ben ther thanne purposed *and* by-hyht Meedes to goode folk/ /
 24 *and* peynes to badde folk/ /syn þat no moeuynge of free corage
 voluntarye ne hath nat deseruyd hem / þat is to seyn neyther meede
 ne payne / *and* it sholde seme thanne / þat thilke thing is alderworst /
 which þat is now demyd for aldermoost Iust *and* most ryhtful//
 28 þat is to seyn þat shrewes ben punysshed/ /or elles þat goode
 foolk¹ ben ygerdonyd/ /the whiche foolk² syn þat hir propre wil ne
 sent hem nat to þat oon / ne to þat oother / þat is to seyn / neyther
 to goode ne to harm// but constreynith hem certeyn necessite of
 32 thinges to comyn/ /thanne ne shollen ther neuere ben / ne neuere
 weeren vice ne vertu/ /but it sholde rathir ben confusion of alle
 dissertes / Medlyd *with-owten* discesion/ /*and* yit ther folweth

¹ gloss: .i. ridiculo.

² gloss: .s. deus.

³ gloss: .i. firmiter.

⁴ const corrected.

⁵ .i. occasus.

⁶ leaf 159, back.

a noother inconuenient of the whiche ther ne may ben thoght no moore felonos ne moore wykke / *and* þat is this / þat so as the ordre of thinges is yled *and* comth of the puruyan^{ce} of god / ne that no thing nis leueful to the conseyles of mankynde / as who seyth þat men han 4 no power to doon no thing / ne wilne no thing / thanne folweth it that owre vices ben referred to the makere of alle good / as who seyth thanne folweth it / þat god owhte han the blame of owre vices / syn he constreynith vs by necessite to doon vices / thanne is ther no 8 reson to hopen in god / ne for to preyen to god / for what sholde any wyht hopyn to god / or why sholden he preyen to god / syn þat the ordynauce of destyne / which þat ne may nat ben inclyned / knytteth *and* streynyth alle thinges þat men may desyren / thanne sholde ther 12 be doon a-wey thilke oonly allyaunce / by-twixen god *and* men / þat is to seyn to hopen *and* to preyen / but by the prys of Rihtwessenesse *and* of verray mekenesse / we desseruyn the gerdon of the dyuine grace / which þat is inestymable / þat is to seyn þat it is so gret / þat 16 it ne may nat ben ful ypreysyd / *and* this is oonly the manere / þat is to seyn / hope *and* preyeres / for which it semyth þat men mowen speke with god / *and* by reson of supplicacion be conioynyd to thilke cleernesse / þat nis nat aproched no rather / or þat men be-sekyn it / 20 *and* impetrent it / *and* yif men weene nat þat hope ne preyeres / ne han strengthes / by the necessite of thinges to comyn / I-resseyuyd² what thing is ther thanne by whiche we mowen ben conioined / *and* clyuen to thilke souereyn prynce of thinges / for which it by- 24 houth by necessite / þat the lynage of mankynde / as þou³ songe / a lytel her by-forn⁴ / be departed *and* vnloynyd from his welle / *and* faylen of his bygynnyng / þat is to seyn god

¶ The .3.^{de} Metur [*margin, leaf 160, back*]

WHat discordable cause / hath to-Rent *and* vnioygnyd⁵ the 28 byndyng or the alliaunce of thinges / þat is to seyn the coniuncion^s of god *and* ⁶man⁷ which þat god hath establysshed so gret batayle by-twixen thise two sooth-

¹ leaf 160. ² gloss: i. graunted. ³ gloss: .s. philosophie.

⁴ gloss: libro 4^o metro sexto.

⁵ gloss: .s. ne se compaciatur similiter.

⁶ leaf 161.

⁷ gloss: quod dicitur (or quasi dicat) nullus.

fast / or verray thinges/ /pat is to seyn bytwixen the puruuaunce of
god and free wil/ /pat they ben synguler and deuydyd¹ / ne pat they
ne wolen nat ben Meddelyd / ne cowpeled to-gydere/ /but per nis no
4 discord to the verray thinges² but they clyuen certeyn alwey to hem-
self/ /but pe thoht of man confowndid / and ouer-thrownen by the
dirke Menbris of the body / ne may nat by fyr of his derkyd look-
ynge pat is to seyn by the vigour of his inshyhte whil the sowle is
8 in the body / knowe the thinne subtyl knyttynges of thingis/ /but
wherfore eschaufeth it³ so by so gret loue to fynden thilke notes of
soth Icouered / pat is to seyn wherfore eschaufeth the thoght of
man by so gret desyr to knowen thilke notificasyons pat ben Ihyd
12 vndyr the couertoures of sooth wot it⁴ awht thilke thing / pat it
a[n]gwyssos desireth to knowe / as who seyth nay/ /ffor no man
trauayleth for to witen thinges pat he wot / and therfore the texte
seyth thus/ /but who trauayleth to witen thinges yknowe / and yif
16 pat he ne knoweth hem nat / what sekyth thilke blynde thoght/
/what is he pat desireth any thing of which he not ryht nawht⁵/ /as
who seyth who so desireth any thing nedes somewhat he knoweth of
it / or elles he ne kowde nat desire it/ /Or who may folwen thinges
20 pat ne ben nat .I.-wist / and thogh pat he seke tho thinges wher
shal he fynde hem/ /what wyht pat is al vnkunynge and ignoraunt
may knowe the forme pat is yfownde⁶ / but whan the sowle by-
holdeth and seth the heye thoght / pat is to seyn god / thanne
24 knoweth it to-gidere the somme / & the syngularites / pat is to seyn
the principulis / & euerych by hym self/ /but now whil the sowle
is hidde in the clowde & in the derkenesse of the menbris of the
bodi it ne hath nat al for-yetin it self / but it withholdeth the somme
28 of thinges / & leesith the ^esyngularites/ /thanne who so pat sekith
sothnesse / he nis in neyther nother habite / for he not nat al / ne
he ne hath nat al foryetyn/ /but yit hym remembryth the somme of
thinges pat he with-holdeth/ /and axeth conseyll / and retreatith⁷
32 deepliche thinges I-seyn by-form / ⁸pat is to seyn the grete somme in

¹ gloss: quod dicitur or (quasi dicat) non est ita.

² gloss: .s. prudencia & liberum arbitrium.

³—⁵ gloss: .s. anima.

⁴ quod dicitur non.

⁶ quod dicitur nullus.

⁵ leaf 161, back.

⁷ gloss: .i. retractat.

⁸ markt Glosa.

his mynde ¹so þat he mowe adden the partyes þat he hath for-yetyn to
 thilke þat he hath with-holden

¶ The 4the prose [*Margin, leaf 164, back*]

THanne seyde she / this is quod she the Olde question of the
 puruyaunce of god / *and* Marchus tullius whan he deuynede 4
 the dyuynaciouns / þat is to seyn in his book þat he wroot of
 diuinaciouns he moeuede grety this question / *and* þou thy
 self hast I-sowht it mochel / *and* owtrely / *and* longe / but yit ne
 hath it nat ben determyned / ne Isped fermely *and* diligently / of any 8
 of yow / *and* the cause of this dirknesse *and* of this dificulte / is
 for þat the moeuyng of the reson of mankynde / ne may nat
 moeuen to / þat is to seyn applien or Ioynen to the symplicite of
 the dyuyn prescience / the whiche symplicite of the deuyn pre- 12
 science / yif þat men myhten thinken it in any manere / þat is to
 seyn / þat yif men myhten thinken / *and* comprehendyn the thinges /
 as god seth hem / thanne / ne sholde ther dwellyn owtrely no
 dowte / the whiche resoun / *and* cause of dificulte ².I. shal assaye as 16
 the laste to shewe / *and* to speden whan I haue fyrst yspendyd / *and*
 answered to the resouns by which þou art ymoewed / ffor I axe why
 þou weenest / þat thilke resouns of hem þat assoylen this question /
 ne be nat spedful ynowh ne sufficient / the whiche solucion / or 20
 the which reson / for þat it demyth þat the prescience nis nat cause
 of necessite to thingis to comyn / than ne weenith it nat þat freedom
 of wyl be destorbed or ylett by prescience / ffor ne drawestow nat
 argumentz from elles where of the necessite of thinges to comyn / as 24
 who seyth any oother wey than thus / but þat thilke thinges þat the
 prescience wot byforn ne mowen nat vnbytyde / þat is to seyn þat
 they moten bytyde / but thanne yif þat prescience / ne putteth no
 necessite to thinges to comyn / as thow thyself hast confessid it / *and* 28
 by-knowen / a litel her byforn³ / what cause or what is it / as who seyth /
 ther may no cause be / by which þat the endes⁴ voluntarie of thinges /
 myhten be constreynyd to certeyn bytydynges⁵ / ffor by grace of
 possession / so þat þou mowe the betere vndirstonde this þat folweth / 32

¹ *markt textus.*

² leaf 165.

³ *gloss: prosa .3.*

⁴ *gloss: .i. exitus.*

⁵ *gloss: quod dicitur verbi gratia.*

/I. pose¹ þat ther ne be no prescience/ /thanne axe I quod she in as
mochel as apartieneth to þat / sholden thanne thinges þat comyn of
free wyl / ben constreynyd to bytyden / by necessite / B nay quod I /
4 thanne ayeinward quod she/ /I suppose þat ther be prescience / but
þat is ne putteth no necessite to thinges / thanne trowe I þat thilke
selue freedom of wil shal dwellen al hool *and* absolut *and* vnbowond-
en / but þou wolt seyn þat al be it so / þat prescience nis nat cause
8 of the necessite of bytydyng to thinges to comyn/ /Algate yit it is
a syngne / þat the thinges ben to bityden by necessite / by this
manere thanne al thogh the prescience ne hadde neuer I-ben / yit
algate or at the leeste weye / it is certeyn thing that the endes² *and*
12 bytydinges of thinges to comyn sholden ben necessarye/ /ffor ³euery
signe shewith *and* signefieth oonly what the thing is⁴/ /but it ne
maketh⁵ nat the thing þat it signefieth / for which it by-houyth fyrst
to shewen þat no thing ne bytydeth / þat it ne bytydith by necessite /
16 or elles yif ther nere no necessite/ /certes thilke prescience ne myhte
nat be syngne of thing þat nis nat/ /but certes it is now certeyn
þat the proeue of this ysustenyd by stydefast reson / ne shal nat ben
lad ne proeued by sygnes / ne by argumentz .I.-taken fro with-owte /
20 but by causes couenable *and* necessarye/ /but þou mayst seyn how
may it be þat the thinges ne bytyden nat þat ben ypurueyed to
comen/ /but certes ryht as we trowen / þat tho thinges which þat the
puruyaunce wot byform to comyn / ne ben nat to bytyden/ /but þat
24 ne sholden we nat demen / but rather al thogh þat they shal bytyden /
yit ne haue they no necessite of hir kynde to be-tyden/ /*and* this
maystow lithly aperceyuen by this þat I shal seyn / /ffor we sen many
thinges whan they ben doon by-form owre eyen / ryht as men sen the
28 kartere worken in the tornynge *and* in atemprynge or adressynge of
hise kartes or charietes/ /*and* by this manere as who seyth / maystow
vndirstonde of alle oother workmen/ /is ther thanne any necessite as
who seyth in owre lookynge / þat constreynith or compellith any of
32 thinges to ben don so⁶/ /boece/ /nay quod I/ /ffor in ydel *and* in veyn
weere al the effect of craft / yif þat alle thinges weeren moeued by

¹ gloss : per impossibile.

² leaf 165, back.

³ gloss : causat.

⁴ gloss : .i. exitus.

⁵ gloss : .i. se eius significatum.

⁶ quod dicitur non.

constreynynge/ /pat is to seyn by constreynynge of owre eyen or of
owre syhte/ /philosophie/ /the thinges thanne quod she / pat whan
men doon hem / ne han no necessite / pat men doon hem / /Ek tho
same thinges fyrst or they ben doon / they ben to comyn with- 4
owte necessite/ /ffor why ther ben somme thinges ¹to bytyden of
which the endes / and the bytydynges of hem / ben absolut / and
qwit / of alle necessite/ /ffor certes I ne trowe nat pat any man
wolde seyn this / pat tho thinges pat men doon now / pat they ne 8
weeren to bytyden fyrst or they weeren I-doon/ /and thilke same
thinges / al thogh / pat men hadden I-wist hem byforn / yit they
han free bytydynges/ /for ryht as science of thinges present/ ne
bryngeth in no necessite to thinges pat men doon/ /ryht so the 12
prescience of thinges to comen ne bryngeth in no necessite to thinges
to be-tyden/ /but pou mayst seyn / pat of thilke same it is I-dowted /
as wheither pat of thilke thinges / pat ne han non issues² / and
bitidynges necessities / yif ther-of may ben any prescience / ffor 16
certes they semyn to discorden / ffor pou weenist pat yif pat thinges
ben I-seyn byforn / pat necessite folwith hem/ /and yif necessite
fayleth hem / they ne myhten nat ben wist byforn/ /and yif nothing³
ne may ben comprehendid by science but certeyn/ /and yif tho 20
thinges pat ne han no certeyn by-tydinges⁴ / ben purueyid as certeyn//
*it sholde ben dirknesse of opynion/ nat soothfastnesse of science//
and pou weenyst pat it be diuerse fro the hoolnesse of science / pat
any man sholde deme a thing to ben oother weys thanne it is it self / 24
and the cause of this Erroure is / pat of alle the thinges pat euery
wyht hath yknowe / they weenen pat tho thinges ben Iknowe al
oonly / by the strengthe and by the nature of the thinges / pat ben
I-wist or yknowe/ /and it is al the contrarye/ /ffor al pat euere is 28
yknowe / it is rather comprehendyd / and knowen nat after his
strengthe / and his nature / but after the faculte pat is to seyn the
power and the nature of hem pat knowen / and for this shal mowen
shewen by a short ensaumples the same Rowndnesse of a body/ 32
/Oother weys the sihte of the eye knowith it / and oother weyes be
towchinge ⁵// the lookynge bi castynge of his beemes waiteth and

¹ leaf 166.

⁴ gloss: exitus.

² gloss: .i. exitus.

⁵ leaf 166, back.

³ gloss: putas.

seth from after al the body to-gidere / *with-owte* moeuynge of it self//
but the towchyng elyueth *and conioigneth* to the Rownde body/
and moeueth abowte the enuyronyng / *and* comprehendith by partyes
4 the Rowndnesse/ *and* the man him self / oother weys / wit by-
holdeth hym / *and* oother weys ymagynacion / *and* oother weys
reson / *and* othir weys Intelligense/ ffor the wit comprehendith *with-*
owteforth the figure of the body of the man / *pat* is establyssed in
8 the matere subiect / but the ymaginacion comprehendith² only the
figure *with-owte* the matere / Reson surmonteth ymaginacion / *and*
comprehendith by vniuersal lookynge / the comune spece³/ *pat* is in
the singuler peces / but the eye of intelligence is heyere / for it sur-
12 mounteth the enuyronyng of the vniuersite / *and* loketh ouer that /
bi pure subtilite of thoght/ thilke same symple forme of man / *pat* is
perdurably / in the dyuyne thoght/ In which this owhte gretly to
ben considered / *pat* the heyiste strenght to comprehendyn thinges / en-
16 braseth *and* contieneth the lower strengthe / but the lower strengthe
ne arysith nat in no manere to heyere strengthe/ witte ne may no thing
comprehende owt of matere / ne the ymagynacion ne lookyth nat the
vniuersels spesces / ne reson taketh nat the symple forme so as Intelli-
20 gence takith/ but Intellygence looketh al a-bouen whan it hath com-
prehendith the forme / it knoweth *and* demyth alle the thinges *pat*
ben vndyr⁴ *pat* forme/ But she⁴ knoweth hem in thilke manere / in the
which it comprehendith thilke same symple forme *pat* ne may neuer
24 ben knowen to none of *pat* oother/ *pat* is to seyn to none of tho thre
forseyde thinges of the sowle / for it knoweth the vniuersite of reson
And the figure of the ymagynacion / *and* the sensible material con-
seyuyd bi wit/ ne it ne vseth nat nor of reson/ ne of ymagynacion /
28 ne of ⁵wit *with-owte*forth/ but it bi-holdeth alle thingis so as I
shal seye bi a strok of thoght formely / *with-owte* discours or colla-
tion/ Certes reson whan it looketh any thing vniuersel / it ne vseth
nat of ymagynacion / nor of witte / *and* algates yit it comprehendeth
32 the thinges ymaginable *and* sensible / for reson is she / *pat* diffynish
et the vniuersel of hir conseyte ryht thus / Man is a resonable two
foted beest/ *and* how so *pat* this knowynge is vniuersel / yit nis

¹ gloss : orbis.

² gloss : vel iudicat.

³ gloss : .i. speciem.

⁴ gloss : s intelligence.

⁵ leaf 167.

ther no wyht / þat ne woot wel / þat a man is a thing¹ ymaginable
 and sensible / and this same considereth wel reson / but þat nis nat
 by ymagynacion nor by wit / but it looketh it by a resonable con-
 cepcion / Also ymaginacion / al be it so þat it taketh of wit the 4
 bygynnynges to seen & to formen the figures / algaates al thogh þat
 wit ne weere nat present / yit it enuyrowneth & comprehendeth
 alle thinges sensible / nat by reson sensible of deemynge / but bi
 reson Imaginatyf / Sestow nat thanne þat alle the thinges in know- 8
 ynge / vsen moore of hir faculte / or of hir power / thanne they
 doon of the faculte or power of thinges þat ben Iknowe / Ne þat nis
 nat wrong / for so as euery Iugement is the dede or doynge of hym
 þat demeth / it by-houyith þat euery wyht performe the werk / and 12
 his entencion / nat of foreyne power / but of his propre power

¶ The .4.th Metur [*margin, leaf 168*]

The porche / þat is to seyn / A gate of the town of athenis /
 ther as philosophres hadden hyr congregasion to desputen //
 thilke porche browhte som tyme oolde men ful dirke in hir 16
 sentences / þat is to seyn philosophres þat hyhten stoyciens /
 þat wenden þat ymagis and sensibilitees / þat is to seyn sensible
 ymaginacion / Or ellis ymagynacion of sensible thinges / weeren
 enpreynted in to sowles / fro bodies with-owte forth / as who seyth / 20
 þat thilke stoyciens wenden þat the sowle hadde ben naked of it
 self / as a Myroure or a cleene parchemyn / so þat alle fygures mosten
 fyrst comyn fro thinges fro with-owte / in to sowles / and ben aprent-
 yd in to sowles / /texte / Ryht as we ben wont somtyme by a swyfte 24
 poyntel / to ficchen lettres emprientyd in the smothernesse or in the
 pleyynnesse of the table of wax / or in parchemyn þat ne hath no
 figure ne note in it / /glose / but now arguith boece ayenis the
 opynyon and seyth thus / but yif the thryuynges sowle ne vnpleyteth 28
 no thing / þat is to seyn ne dooth no thing by his propre moeuyn-
 gis but suffreth and lith to tho figures and to tho notes of bodies with-
 owte forth / & yildeth ymages ydel and veyn in the Manere of a
 Myroure / whennes² thryueth thanne / or whennes comth thilke know- 32

¹ leaf 168, back.

² gloss : quoniam.

ynge in owre sowle / þat decernith *and* byholdeth alle thinges/ *and*
whennes is thilke strengthe þat biholdeth the synguler thinges/ *or*
whennes is the strengthe þat deuydeth thinges / .I.knowe / *and* thilke
4 strengthe þat gaderith to-gidere the thinges deuýded/ *and* the
strengthe þat chesith his entrechawngyd wey/ /ffor som tyme it
heuith vp the heuyd / þat is to seyn / þat it heuith vp the entencion
to Ryht heye thinges¹/ *and* som tyme it dessendith in to ryht lowe
8 thinges²/ *and* whan it retorneth in to hym self it reproeueth *and*
distroyet the false thinges by the trewe thinges/ /Certes this strengthe³
is cause moore efficient / *and* mochel moore myhty to sen *and* to
knowe thinges/ /thanne thilke cause þat suffreth *and* resseyuyth the
12 notes *and* the figures Impressed in manere of matere/ /Algates the
passion/ þat is to seyn the suffraunce or the wit in the qwyke body /
goth byforn extinge *and* moeuynge the strengthis of the thoght//
ryht so as whan þat cleernesse smyteth the eyen *and* moeueth hem
16 to sen / *or* ryht so as voys or sown hurtelith to the Eeres *and* com-
moeueth hem to herkne / than is the strengthe of the thoght I-moewed
and excited *and* clepith forth to semblable moeuynge the spesces
þat it halt with-inne it self/ *and* addeth tho spesces to the notes *and*
20 to the thinges with-owte forth / *and* medlith the ymages of thinges
with-owte forth to tho formes I-hidde with-inne hym self

¶ The .5.th prose [margin, leaf 170]

24 **B**Vt what yif þat in bodies to ben feelid / þat is to seyn in
the takynge of knowlechinge of bodyly thinges ⁴And al be
it so þat the qualites of bodies þat ben obiecte fro with-owte-
forth / moeuen *and* entalenten the Instrumentz of the wittes//
and al be it so þat the passion of the bodi þat is to seyn the witte
or the suffraunce / goth to-forn the strengthe of the workynge corage /
28 the which passion or suffraunce clepith forth the dede of the thoght
in hym self / *and* moeueth *and* exiteth in this mene while the formes
þat restin with-inne forth/ *and* yif þat insensibele bodies as I haue
seyd / owre corage nis nat I-tawht / *or* emprienpted / by passion⁵ to
32 knowe thise thinges/ /but demyth *and* knoweth of his owne strengthe

¹ gloss: .i. principijs.

² gloss: .s. conclusiones.

³ gloss: .s. anima.

⁴ leaf 170, back.

⁵ gloss: non ex natura rei.

the passion) or suffraunce subiect to the body Moche moore thanne
tho thinges þat ben absolut *and* quite fro alle talent; or affeccions of
bodies / as god or hise Aungelis / ne folwin nat in discernynge thinges
obiet fro *with-owt*eforth/ /but they acomplyssen *and* spedin the 4
dede of hir thoht / by this reson) thanne ther comyn many maner
knowynges to diuerse *and* differynge substances/ /ffor the wit of the
body / the whiche wit is naked *and* despoyled of alle oother know-
ynges / thilke wit comth to beestis / þat ne mowe nat moeuen hem 8
self / her *and* ther as oystrys *and* musculis *and* other swiche shelle
fyssh of the see / þat clyuen / *and* ben norysshed to Rochis¹/ /but
the ymaginacion) comth to Remuable beestis þat semyn to han
talent to fleen or to desiren any thing / but reson) is al oonly to the 12
lynage of mankynde / ryht as intelligence is oonly the deuyne nature /
of which it folweth / þat thilke knowynge is moore worth thanne
thise oothre / syn it knoweth by his propre nature / nat oonly his
subiect / as who seyth it ne knoweth nat al oonly / þat apertieneth 16
properly to his knowynge/ /but it knoweth the subiect; of alle oother
knowynges/ /but² how shal it thanne be / yif þat wit *and* ymagina-
cion) stryuen ayein resonyng / *and* seyn that ³of thilke vniuersels
thinges þat Reson) weenith to sen þat it nis ryht nawht/ /for wit *and* 20
ymaginacion) seyn / þat that / þat is sensible / or ymaginable / it ne
may nat be vniuersel / thanne is eyther the Iugement of reson) soth
ne þat ther nis no thing sensible⁴/ or elles for þat reson) wot wel þat
many thinges ben subiect to wit / *and* to ymagynacion/ /thanne is 24
the concepcion) of reson) veyn *and* false which þat looketh *and* com-
prehendith þat þat is sensible *and* synguler as vniuersel/ /*and* yif þat
Reson) wolde answeren ayein to thise two / þat is to seyn to witte *and*
to ymaginacion) / *and* seyn þat soothly she hir self / þat is to seyn 28
reson) / lokith *and* comprehendith by reson) of vniuersalite / bothe þat
that is sensible / *and* þat that is ymaginable / And þat thilke two þat
is to seyn wit *and* yma[gina]cion) ne mowen nat strechchen ne en-
hansen hem self to knowy of vniuersalite / for þat the knowynge of 32
hem / ne may exceden ne surmon)te the bodyly figures/ /Certes of the

¹ gloss: .i. saccis.

² gloss: quoniam.

³ leaf 171.

⁴ gloss: quod absurdum est.

knowinge of thinges / men owhten rather yeuen credence to the moore
 stidefast / *and* to the moore parfyt Iugement/ /In this manere
 stryuyng thanne we þat han strengthe of resonynge / *and* of
 4 ymaginyng *and* of wit / þat is to seyn / bi reson / *and* by ymagin-
 acion *and* bi wit / *and* we sholde rathir preyse the cause of reson /
 as who seyth than the cause of wit *and* of ymaginacion/ /Semblable
 thing is it þat the Resoun of mankynde / ne weeneth nat / þat the
 8 deuyne intelligence bi-holdith or knoweth thinges to comyn/ /but ryht
 as the Resoun of mankynde knoweth hem/ /ffor þou arguiste¹ / *and* seyst
 thus / þat yif it seme nat to men / þat some thinges han certeyn / *and*
 necessarye bytydinges / they ne mowen nat ben wyst byforn certeynly
 12 to bi-tyden/ /*and* thanne nist her no prescience of thilke thinges /
 and yif we trowe þat prescience be in these thinges / thanne is ther
 no thing / þat it ne bideth bi necessite/ /but ²Certes yif we myhten
 han the Iugement of the dyuyne thoght / as we ben parsoneres³ of
 16 Resoun / ryht so as we han demyd / þat it bi-houith þat Imagination
and wit be by-nethe reson / ryht so wolde we demen þat it weere
 ryhtful thing / þat mannes Resoun owte to submitten it self / *and* to
 ben by-nethe the dyuyne thoght/ /ffor which yif þat we mowen as
 20 who seyth þat yif þat we mowen / I conseyle þat we enhance vs in
 to þe heihte of thilke souereyn Intelligence/ /ffor ther shal Resoun wel
 seen þat / þat it ne may nat bi-holden in it self / *and* certes þat is
 this / in what manere the prescience of god seth alle thingis certains
 24 *and* diffynysshed / al though they ne han no certeyn Issues or bitid-
 inges/ /ne this nis non opinion / but it is rather the symplicite of þe
 souereyn science / þat nis nat enclosed / nor I-shet / within none
 bowndes

¶ The .5.th Metur [margin, leaf 172]

28 **T**he beestis passen bi the Erthes bi ful diuerse figuris for
 som of hem han hir bodies strawght & crepin in the /dust /
and drawn after hem a traas or a forwh / I-kountynued /
 þat is to seyn / as nadris or snakis/ /*and* oother beestis by
 32 the wandrynge lyhtnesse of hir wyngis betyn the wyndes / *and* ouer-
 swymmyn the spaces of the longe eyr by moyst fleeynge/ /*and* oother

¹ gloss : disseris.

² leaf 171, back.

³ soneres corrected.

bestis gladen hem self to diggen hir traas or hir steppis in the Erthe
 with hir goyng; or with hir feet/ /and ¹to gon eyther bi the greene
 feeldes / or elles to walken vnder the woodes/ /and al be it so þat þou
 seest þat they alle discordyn bi diuerse formes / algates hir faces 4
 enclynnyd heuyeth hir dulle wittes/ /Only the lynage of man heuyth
 heyeste his heye heuyd / and stonidith lyht with his vp-Ryht body /
 & by-hooldith the erthes vnder hym/ /and but yif þou erthely man
 wexest yuel owt of thi wit / this figure amonestith the þat axest the 8
 heuene with thy ryhte visage / and hast areysyd thy fore-heuyd to
 beryn vp a heygh thy corage / so þat thy thoght / ne be nat I-heuyed /
 ne put lowe vnder foote / syn þat thy body is so heye areysed

¶ The 6th prose and the laste [margin, leaf 177]

THerfore thanne as I haue shewyd a litel her byform / þat alle 12
 thinges þat is I-wyst / nis nat knowen / by his nature propre /
 but bi the nature of hem þat comprehenden it / lat vs loke
 now in as mochel as it is leueful² to vs/ /as who seyth / lat
 vs loke now as we mowen / which þat the estat is of the deuyne 16
 substance / so þat we mowen ek knowen what his³ science is / the
 commune Iugement of alle creaturis resonablis / thanne is this / þat
 god is eterne / Lat vs considere thanne what is eternite ffor certes þat
 shal shewen vs to-gidere the deuyne nature / and the deuyne science / 20
 Eternite thanne is parfyt possession / and al-to gidere of lyf Inter-
 mynable/ /and þat shewith moore cleerly / bi the comparison / or
 collacion of temporel thinges/ /ffor alle thing þat lyueth in tyme it
 is present / and procedith fro preterit; in to futuris / þat is to seyn 24
 fro tyme passed in to tyme comynge / ne ther nys nothing estab-
 lysshed in tyme / þat may enbracen to-gidere al the space of his lyf//
 ffor certes yit ne hath it nat takyn the tyme of to morwe / and it
 hath lost the tyme of ysterday / and certes in the lyf of this day / ye ne 28
 lyuen no moore but ryht as in the moeuable and transitorye moment//
 • thanne thilke thing þat suffreth temporel condicion / al thogh þat
 it neuere bygan to be / ne thogh it neuere cese for to be / as Aristotile
 demyd of the ⁴world / and al thogh þat the lyf of it be stretchched 32

¹ gloss: gaudent.

² gloss: .i. fas.

³ gloss: dei.

⁴ leaf 177, back.

with infinite of tyme / yit algates nis it no swych thing / *pat* men
 myhten trowen by ryht *pat* it is eterne/ /ffor al thogh *pat* it compre-
 hende *and* embrace the space of lyf Infynit / yit algates ne embrasith
 4 it nat the space of the lyf al to-gidere/ /ffor it ne hat nat the futuris
pat ne ben nat yit / ne it ne hath no lengers the preterit; *pat* ben
 I-doon / or I-passed but thilke thing thanne *pat* hath *and* compre-
 hendith to-gidere al the plente of the lyf Intermynable / to whom
 8 ther ne fayleth nawht of the future / *and* to whom ther nis nawht of
 p^e preterite escapyd nor I-passed / thilke same is I-witnesshed / *and*
 I-proeued by ryht to ben Eterne/ /*and* it by-houyth by necessite /
pat thilke þing^e be al wey present to hym self / *and* compotent / as
 12 who seyt al wey present to hym self / *and* so myhty *pat* al be ryht at
 his pleasaunce / *and* *pat* he haue al present the Infynyte of the
 moeuable tyme/ /Wher-fore som men trowen wrongfulli *pat* whan
 they heeren / *pat* it semede / to plato / *pat* this world / ne hadde
 16 neuere bygynnyng of tyme/ /ne *pat* it neuere shal han faylynge//
 they weenen in this manere *pat* this world be makid coeterne *with* his
 makere / as who seyth / they weene *pat* this world *and* god ben makid
 to-gidere eterne / *and* *pat* is a wrongful weenyng/ /ffor oother thing is it
 20 to ben I-lad by lyf intermynable / as plato graunted to the world *and*
 oother thing is it to enbrace to-gydere al the present of the lyf intermyn-
 able / the whiche thing it is cleer *and* manyfest / *pat* it is propre to the
 deuyne thoght/ /ne it ne sholde nat semen to vs / *pat* god is Eldere
 24 þanne thinges *pat* ben I-makid by quantyte of tyme/ /but rather by
 the proprete of his symple nature/ /ffor this ilke infynyt moeuyng of
 temporel thinges / folweth this presentarye¹ estat of lyf vmoeuable /
 and so as it ne may nat countrefeten it / ne feynen it / ne be euene
 28 lyk to it/ /ffor the inmoeuablete / *pat* is to seyn *pat* is in the eternite
 of god / it failleth and falleth in to moeuyng / fro the simplicite of
 the presence of god / *and* disencresith in to the Infynit quantite of
 future *and* of preterite/ /*and* so as it ne may nat han to-gidere al the
 32 plente of the lyf/ /Algates yit / for as moche as it ne cesith neuere
 for to ben / in som manere / it semith som del to vs / *pat* it folweth
and resemblith thilke thing *pat* it ne may nat atayne to ne fullfyllen//
and byndith it² self to som manere presensse of this litel *and* swyfte

¹ leaf 178.

² gloss: .s. mocio temporalis.

Moment¹ / /the which presence/ of this lytele and swyfte moment / for
þat it berith. a manere ymage / or lyknesse / of the ay dwellynge
presence of god / it graunteth to swyche manere things as it bitydith
to þat it semith hem / as thise things han yben / and ben/ and for 4
þat the presence of swych lytel moment ne may nat dwelle/ /ther-for
it rauysshed and took the Infynyte wey of tyme / þat is to seyn bi
succession/ and bi this manere is it I-doon / for þat it sholde con-
tynue the lyf in gooinge / of the whiche lyf / it ne myhte nat embrace 8
the plente in dwellynge/ and for-thy yif we wollen putten worthi
names to thinges and folwen plato / lat vs seye thanne sothly / þat
god is eterne / and þat the world is perpetuel/ /thanne syn þat euery
Iugement knowith and comprehendith bi his owne nature thinges þat 12
ben subiect / vn to hym/ /ther is sothly to god / al weys / an Eterne
and presentarie estat / and the science of him² þat ouer-passeth al
temporel moeuement³ dwellith in the symplycite of his presence and
embraceth and considerith alle the Infynyt spaces of tymes preterit; 16
and futures/ and looketh in his symple knowynge alle thinges of
preterit ryht as they weeren I-doon ⁴presently riht now/ /yif þou wolt
thanne thinken / and auyse the prescience / bi which it knoweth alle
thinges / þou ne shalt nat demyn it as prescience of thinges to comyn / 20
but þou shal demyn it moore ryhtfully / þat it is science of presence /
or of Instaunce / þat neuer ne fayleth/ /ffor which it nis nat yclepyd
⁵puruydence / but it sholde rather ben clepyd puruyaunce/ þat is
establysshed ful fer fro ryht lowe thinges / and byhooldeth from a- 24
fer alle thinges ryht as it weere fro the heye heyhte of thinges/ /why
axestow thanne / or why desputestow thanne / þat thilke thinges ben
doon bi necessite / whiche þat ben yseyn and knowen bi the deuyne
syhte / syn þat forsothe men ne maken nat thilke thinges necessarye 28
which þat they sen ben I-doon in hir syhte/ /ffor ⁶addith thi bi-hoold-
inge any necessite to thilke thinges þat þou bi-hoolest presente/ /Nay
quod I/ /philosophie/ /Certes thanne yif men myhte maken any digne
comparison or collacion of þ^e presence diuine / and of þ^e presence of 32
mankynde / ryht so as ye sen some thinges in this temporel present /
ryht so seth god alle thinges bi his eterne present, /wherfore this

¹ gloss: instantis.² gloss: .s. dei.³ gloss: mocio.⁴ leaf 178, back.⁵ gloss: providencia.⁶ gloss: quoniam.

deuyne prescience / ne chaungeth nat the nature ne the proprete of
 thinges/ /but bi-hooldeth swyche thinges present to hym ward / as
 they shullen bityde to yow ward in tyme to comyn/ /ne it ne con-
 4 fowndeth nat the Iugement of thinges/ /but bi O syhte of his thowht /
 he knoweth the thinges to comyn / as wel neccessarye as nat necces-
 sarye/ /Ryht so as whan ye seen to-gidere a man walke on the erthe /
and the sonne arysen in the heuene/ /al be it so *pat* ye sen *and* bi-
 8 holden / *pat* oon *and* *pat* oother to-gidere / yit natheles ye demyn *and*
 discernen / *pat* that oon is voluntarye *and* *pat* oother necessarie /
 Ryht so thanne the deuyng lookynge by-holdynge alle ¹thinges
 vndyr hym / ne trowblith nat the qualite of thinges / *pat* ben cer-
 12 teynly present to hym ward / But as to the condicion of tyme / for-
 sothe they ben future/ /ffor which it folweth / *pat* this nis non
 opinion) but rather a stidefast knowynge I-strengthened by sothnesse /
pat whanne *pat* god knoweth any thing to be / he ne vnwot nat that
 16 thilke thing wantith necessite to be/ /this is to seyn *pat* whan *pat*
 god knoweth any thing to bi-tyde he wot wel *pat* it ne hath no
 necessite to bityde/ /*and* yif þou seyst heere *pat* thilke thing *pat* god
 seth to bityde/ /it ne may nat vnbitide/ /as who seyth it mot bide//
 20 *and* thilke thing *pat* ne may nat vnbitide it mot bityde bi necessite /
and *pat* þou streyne² me bi this name of necessite/ /Certes I wol wel
 confessen *and* by-knowe a thing of ful sad trowthe / but vnnethe
 shal ther any wyht mowe sen it / or come ther-to / but yif *pat* he be
 24 by-holdere of þe deuyne thoght/ /ffor I wol answeren the thus / *pat*
 thilke thing *pat* is future / whan it is referred to the deuyne know-
 ynge / thanne is it necessarye/ /but certis whan it is vndirstondyn in
 his owne kynde / men sen it is owtrely free / *and* absolut fro alle
 28 neccessite/ /for certes ther ben two maneres of necessite / *pat* oon
 necessite is symple / as thus *pat* it bihouith bi necessite / *pat* alle
 men be mortal or dedly/ /A noother necessite is condicionel / as thus
 yif þou wost *pat* a man walketh / it bi-houith bi necessite *pat* he
 32 walke/ /thilke thing thanne *pat* any wyht hath I-knowe to be / it ne
 may ben non oother weyes thanne he knoweth it to be/ /but this
 condicion ne draweth nat with hir thilke necessite symple/ /ffor

¹ leaf 179.

² gloss : astringas.

certes this necessite condicional / the propre nature of it ne maketh
it nat but the adieccion of the condicion maketh it / ffor no necessite
ne constreynyth a man ¹to gon / þat goth bi his propre wil / al be it
so þat whan he goth þat it is necessarie þat he goth / Ryht on this 4
same manere thanne yif þat the puryaunce of god seth any thing
present / than mot thilke thinge ben bi necessite / al thogh þat it ne
haue no necessite of his owne nature / but certes the futuris þat
bityden bi freedom of Arbitre / god seth hem alle to-gidere present // 8
thise thinges thanne yif they ben referred to the deuyne syhte /
thanne ben they makend necessarye bi the condicion of the deuyne
knowynge / but certes yif thilke thinges be consideryd bi hem self
they ben absolut of necessite / and ne forletyn nat ne cesen nat of the 12
liberte of hir owne nature / thanne certes with-owte dowte / alle the
thinges shollen be doon which þat god wot biforn þat they ben to
comyn / but som of hem comyn and bityden² of free arbitre or of free
wiȝ / þat al be it so / þat they by tyden / yit algates ne leese they 16
nat hir propre nature in beeynge / bi the which fyrst or þat they
weeryn I-doon / they hadden power nat to han bityd / Boece / what is
this to seyn thanne *quod* I / þat thinges ne ben nat necessarye bi hir
propre nature / so as they comyn in alle maneres in the lyknesse of 20
necessite / bi the condicion of the deuyne science / *philosophie* / this
is the difference *quod* she / þat tho thinges þat I purposede the a
lytel her byforn / þat is to seyn the sonne arysynge / and the man
walkynge / þat ther whiles þat thilke thinges ben I-doon / they ne 24
myhte nat ben vndoon natheles þat oon of hem or it was I-doon / it
houyd by necessite þat it was I-doon / but nat that oother / Ryht so
is hit heere þat the thinges þat god hath present / with-owte dowte
they shollen ben / but som of hem descendith of the nature of thinges 28
as the sonne arysynge / and som descendith of the powere of the
doeres as the man walkynge / thanne seyde I no wrong / þat yif þat
thise thinges ben referryd to the deuyne knowynge ³thanne ben they
necessarye / and yif they ben considerid by hem self thanne ben th[e]y 32
absolut fro the bond of necessite / riht so as alle thinges þat apierith
or shewith to þe wittes / yif þou referre it to reson / it is vniuersel / and

¹ leaf 179, back.² gloss : *profisciscuntur*.³ leaf 180.

yif þou referre it or loke it to it self / than is it singuler / but now
 yif þou seyst thus / þat yif it be in my power to chaunge my purpos /
 than shal I voyde the puruyaunce of god / whan þat perauenture
 4 I shal han chaunged the thinges þat he knoweth byforn / thanne shal
 I answere the thus / Certes þou mayst wel chaungen thy purpos / but
 for as mochel as the present sothnesse of the deuyne puruyaunce / hi-
 holdeth þat þou mayst chaunge thy purpos / and wheyther þou wolt
 8 chaunge it or no / and whyderward þat þou torne it þou ne mayst nat
 eschuen the deuyne prescience / ryht as þou ne mayst nat fleen the syhte
 of the presente eye / al thowh þat thow torne thy self bi thi free wyl /
 in to diuerse accions / but þou mayst seyn ayein / how shal it thanne
 12 be / shal nat the deuyne science be chaungyd bi my disposicion /
 whan þat I wole O thing now / and now a noother / and thilke
 prescience ne semyth it nat to entrechaunge stowndes ¹of knowynge /
 as who seyth ne shal it nat seme to vs / þat the deuyne prescience
 16 entrechaungeth hise diuerse stowndes of knowynge / so þat it knowe
 sum tyme O thing and som tyme the contrarie / No forsothe quod I //
 ffor the deuyne syhte² renneth to-forn and seth alle futures / and
 clepith hem ayein / and retorneth³ hem to the presence of his propre
 20 knowinge / ne he ne entrechaungeth nat so as þou weenest the
 stowndes¹ of for-knowynge / as now this / now þat / but he⁴ ay dwell-
 ynge comth by-forn / and embraseth at o strook alle thy mutacions /
 and this presence to comprehenden / and to sen alle thinges god /
 24 ne hath nat taken it of the bitydinge of thinges to come / but of his
 propre symplicite / and her⁵-bi is assoyled thilke thing þat þou puttest
 alitel her byforn / þat is to seyn / þat it is vnworthy thyng to seyn //
⁵þat owre futures yeuyn cause of the science of god / ffor certes this
 28 strengthe of the deuyne science / which þat embraceth alle thinges bi
 his presentarye knowinge / establisseth manere to alle thinges / and it
 ne oweth nawht to latter⁶ thinges / and syn þat thise thinges ben thus /
 than is ther freedom of arbitre / þat dwelleth hool and vn-wemmyd
 32 to Mortal men / ne the lawes ne purposen nat wykkedly Medes and
 peynes to þe wyllynge of men / þat ben vnbownden and quite of all
 necessite / and god byholdere and for-witere of alle thinges dwelleth

¹ gloss: vices.

⁴ gloss: .s. deus.

² gloss: intuitus.

⁵ leaf 180, back.

³ gloss: retorques.

⁶ gloss: posterioribus.

BOOK v.] *The present Eternity of God's Sight rewards the Good, torments* 139
PROSE 6.] *the Ill. Eschew Vice; love Virtue; pray humbly to God on high.*

a-boue / *and* the present eternite of his sihte renneth alwey *with* the
diuerse qualite of owre dedes / despensynge *and* ordeynynge Meedes
to goode men / *and* torment to wykkedmen/ /ne in ydel ne in veyn
ne ben ther nat put in god / hope *and* preyeris / þat ne mowen ne 4
ben vnspedful ne *with*-owte effect whan they ben ryhtful/ /withston
thanne *and* eschue þou vices/ / worshiþe *and* loue þou vertuus / areys
thy corage to ryhtful hopes / yilde þou humble preyeris a heygh/
Gret necessite of prowesse *and* vertu is encharged *and* commaunded 8
to yow yif ye nyl nat' dissimulen/ /syn þat ye workyn *and* doon þat
is to seyn / yowre dedes / or yowre workes by-forn the eyen of þe Iuge
þat seth *and* demyth alle thinges/ /To whom be goye & worshiþe bi
Infynyt tymes / A. M. E. N.

12

Explicit expliceat ludere scriptor eat
ffinito libro sit laus et gloria Christo
Corpore scribentis sit gratia cunetipotentis

GLOSSARIAL AND GENERAL INDEX.

BY W. M. WOOD.

- Abayssen, 113/26, to be abashed, dismayed.
 Abaysshed, 3/20, abashed.
 Abayst, 84/14, abashed.
 Abieth, 85/26, suffers.
 Ablinge, Ablynge, 16/32, 69/1, enabling.
 Abood, 50/3, abode.
 Aboven, 2/21, above.
 Abreggyng, 117/11, curtailng.
 Abyde, 3/21, to wait.
 Abydyng, 25/32, expecting.
 Abyen, 97/27, suffer.
 Abyest, 27/11, sufferest, endurest.
 Achademicis, 3/12, Grecian schools, or academies.
 Achat, 9/8, purchase.
 Achelows, 115/7, Achelous.
 Achemenie, 117/24, Achemenia.
 Acheved, 11/15, achieved, accomplished.
 Achoken, 32/29, choke.
 Acomplyse, 72/19, accomplish.
 Acomplyssed, 105/33, accomplished.
 Accordable, 49/9, agreeing.
 Cordaunce, 111/23, agreement.
 Cordaunt, 12/2, agreeing, unanimous.
 Acorde, 67/30, accord.
 Acordy, 110/8, agree.
 Acordyn, 53/17, live in accord.
 Accountedest, 33/7, accounted.
 Accountynge, 4/4, calculation.
 Acoyede, 26/2, soothed, quieted.
 Active life, the, 2/21.
 Actorros, 45/23, authors.
 Acusor, 57/5, informer.
- Adden, 65/16, add.
 Adieccion, 137/1, addition.
 Adrad, 30/8, in fear, afraid.
 Adressynge, 126/28, directing, controlling.
 A fer, 54/20, afar.
 Affryke, 42/2, Africa.
 Agamenon, 114/12, Agamemnon.
 Agast, 30/9, 59/21, 60/3, 84/1, aghast, afraid, frightened.
 Agasten, 84/16, to frighten.
 Agastyth, 109/22, terrifies, frightens.
 Agoon, 54/33, ago.
 Agreeable, 32/33, 62/22, pleasant, sweet.
 Agrysen, 5/28, to be afraid, dread.
 Agryseth, 16/27, dreadeth.
 Agrysyst, 21/2, dreadest.
 A heygh, 133/10, on high.
 Ajuged, 9/20, adjudged.
 Akkornes, 95/26, acorns.
 Aknowe, 10/20, 96/10, acknowledged.
 Albyn, 9/21, 11/30, a Consul at Rome.
 Alcidiades, 63/24, Alcibiades.
 Alder fayrest, 68/17, fairest of all.
 Alderfirst, 5/29, first of all.
 Aldermost, Aldermooost, 97/10, 122/27, most of all.
 Alderworst, 122/26, worst of all.
 Algates, Allegates, 12/9, 53/17, 63/29, yet, nevertheless.
 Allegged, 96/20, alleviated.
 Allone, 74/9, alone.
 Almest, 84/30, almost.

- Al owtterly, 85/17, utterly.
 Altorenden, 110/10, tear all in pieces.
 Alwey, 56/8, away.
 Alyaunce, 110/7, alliance.
 Alyene, 18/6, to alienate.
 Alyter, 98/29, a little.
 Amenused, 9/1, diminished.
 Amenuseth, 11/34, lesseneth, diminisheth.
 Amenysed, 27/32, diminished.
 Amesureth, 21/16, measureth.
 Amoeved, Amoved, 2/31, 15/3, moved.
 Amonestith, 133/8, admonisheth.
 Anonestyng, 115/28, admonition, exhortation.
 Amonges, 41/10, amongst.
 Amonicion, 7/25, admonition.
 Amynstryth, 105/26, administers.
 Anaxogore, 6/18, Anaxagoras.
 Ancre, 28/9, 39/6, anchor.
 Anguisseth, 62/20, tormenteth.
 Angwissos, 28/19, anxious, sorrowful.
 Angwyssh, Angwysse, 28/26, 62/2, grief, misery, anguish.
 Angwysos, 66/25, anxieties.
 An hegh, 119/12, on high.
 Anoy, 84/16, annoying.
 Anoye, 28/15, be not grieved, sorry.
 Anoyeden, 110/16, annoy.
 Anoyos, 3/30, 14/19, annoying, hurtful.
 Anoyously, 63/5, dangerously, hurtfully.
 Answer, 94/1, answer.
 Antheus, 115/12, Antæus.
 Antonius (Caracalla), 59/28.
 Aparailleth, 4/9, adorneth.
 Aparaylementus, 34/16, clothing, ornament.
 Apareylen, Aparelyn, 11/11, 23/11, array, apparel.
 Aparayles, 92/11, apparel.
 Aparseyvede, 81/14, perceived.
 Apartienyth, 84/33, appertaineth.
 Appased, 31/28, passed away.
 Apayed, 32/28, pleased, satisfied.
 Apayed, 16/8, impaired.
 Apaysede, 115/13, appeased.
 Apeeren, 4/9, appear.
 Apercevyd, 10/1, apperceived.
 Apermanides, 83/15, Parmenides.
 Apertienen, 57/10, appertain.
 Apertly, 11/1, 70/16, plainly.
 Apetid, 76/19, appetite.
 Aposyd, 15/33, opposed.
 Aprentyd, 129/23, emprinted.
 Apresse, 39/28, oppress.
 Aproche, 19/16, 112/32, 123/20, approach.
 Apurgynge, 99/1, a purging.
 Aquylon, 16/28, 26/30, the wind.
 Arayseth, 92/18, raiseth.
 Arbitre, 119/28, 121/7, will, free will.
 Archadie, 95/21, Arcadia.
 Arcturus, Arctour, 14/13, 103/7, the star.
 Ardaunt, 94/28, ardent.
 Aresten, 21/34, to stop, arrest.
 Aretten, 27/12, ascribe to, impute to.
 Areysen, 86/21, rise.
 Areysyd, 133/9, raised.
 Aristotile, Arystotele, Arystotulis, 63/21, 116/33, 133/31, Aristotle.
 Armures, 4/21, 35/18, 92/14, armour, arms.
 Arpiis, 115/1, the Harpies.
 Arraced, 6/11, 18/6, 77/21, 117/31, to tear, separate.
 Arthow, Artow, 4/23, 7/21, 32/19, art thou.
 Arwys, 115/1, arrows.
 Arysith, 111/26, arises.
 Arysinges, 14/3, 43/16, 103/12, risings.
 Aryve, 39/6, come on shore.
 Aryvede, 95/10, brought on shore.
 Asayle, 37/39, to assail.
 Ascapyng, 98/17, escape.
 Assemble, 62/30, gather together, amass (money).
 Aspere, 21/26, 63/6, sharp, rough.
 Aspre, 48/19, sharp.
 Asprenesse, 98/34, sharpness.
 Assaied, 28/34, essayed.
 Assaye, 17/4, test.
 Assaye, 19/1, say.
 Assoyled, 138/25, absolved.
 Assoylen, 116/2, 120/6, to absolve, pay, dissolve.
 Assyngned, 110/24, assigned.
 Ast, 18/20, hast.
 Asthonyng, 4/24, astonishment.
 Astoned, 3/20, 49/16, astonished.
 Astonyd, 95/3, stupid.

- Astonyenge, 102/26, astonishment.
 Astronomy, 4/4.
 Ataast, 20/18, taste.
 Atayne, 7/2, 29/8, to reach, attain.
 Ataynt, 20/32, 54/32, attained.
 Atemprounce, 107/27, tempering, temperament.
 Atempre, 48/13, moderate.
 Atempre, 19/21, modest.
 Atempreth, 4/8, 14/8, 111/23, moderating, tempering.
 Atemprynge, 126/28, controlling.
 Ateynith, Atteyneth, 90/15, 46/24, attaineth.
 Athenes, Athenis, 15/13, 129/14, Athens.
 Atre, 54/7, a tree.
 Attrides, 114/12, Atrides.
 Atwyne, 77/18, in two.
 Auctorite, 3/20, authority.
 Auncestris, 61/13, ancestors.
 Auster, 19/6, 26/28, the cold wind.
 Autompne, Autumpne, 4/10, 14/11, autumn.
 Avalen, 111/27, fall down.
 Avaunsed, 28/15, advanced, furthered.
 Avauntede, 1/21, boast.
 Avauntynge, 11/33, boasting.
 Aventros, Aventuros, 18/28, 27/14, fortuitous.
 Adventure, 13/6, event.
 Averyce, 56/6, 94/28, avarice.
 Aveyse, 135/20, consider, advise.
 L. Itaque si praesentiam [praesentiam *other MSS.*] pensare uelis qua cuncta dinoscit.
 Awaytez, 63/5, snares.
 Awaytor, 94/32, one who lies in wait.
 Awht, 73/16, ought.
 Axed, 9/15, asked.
 Axestow, 10/12, 18/10, askest thou.
 Ay, 39/55, ever.
 Ay dwellynge, 135/2, ever-dwelling.
 Ayeins, Ayenis, 5/32, 6/9, 77/1, against.
 Ayeinward, 29/13, on the contrary, on the other hand.
 Ayeyn, 99/17, again.
 Bachus, 16/30, 35/6, Bacchus, the god of wine.
 Bar, 2/28, 26/3, bore.
 Barayne, Bareyne, 21/31, 90/18, barren.
 Baren me an hand, 12/18, accuse me falsely.
 Basilicis, 9/28, one of Boethius's accusers.
 Basynnes of bras, 103/17, cymbals.
 Basyns, 103/21, basins.
 Bataylen, 11/22, 113/6, to war, to do battle.
 Beemes, 5/13, 61/23, beams.
 Beoryn, 109/10, bear.
 Behated, 58/22, hated.
 Ben, 11/2, been.
 Ben, 62/22, bees.
 Beneme, 29/30, deprive of, take away.
 Bere, 111/15, the Bear, *i.e.* the Polar star.
 Beren, Beryn, 57/1, 133/10, bear.
 Besekyn, 123/20, beseech.
 Bestys, 62/10, beasts.
 Bet, 24/29, be.
 Bet, 39/15, 49/17, better.
 Beternesses, 29/17, bitternesses.
 Betith, 5/11, beateth.
 Bihetist, 87/20, promised.
 Bisegyd, 95/22, besieged.
 Bittre, 6/25, bitter.
 Blake, 19/5, 79/8, black.
 Blases, 103/22, blasts.
 Blawndyssynge, 20/13, 23/13, 84/6, flattery, blandishment.
 Bleched, 37/15, bleached.
 Blemished, 13/3, abused.
 Blende, 19/17, blind.
 Blysfulnesse, 29/6, happiness.
 Blysse, 26/7, blessings.
 Blyssed, 37/43, blessed.
 Blythenesse, 25/27, joyfulness.
 Boch, 56/25, botch, blain, sore.
 Bodith, 111/20, foretelletth.
 Boekys, 15/29, books.
 Boere, Boor, 95/16, 115/15, boar.
 Boetes, 103/10, the star Boötes.
 Bole, 63/14, bull.
 Boot, 41/27, did bite.
 Bordure, 2/20, border, hem.
 Borias, Boryas, 5/10, 14/11, Boreas.
 Bossel, 9/9, bushel (a corn measure).
 Bosses, 50/24, bushes, weeds.
 Bosten, 61/27, to boast.
 Botme, 7/9, 19/8, bottom.

- Bowhte, 9/9, bought.
 Bownte, 39/7, 73/23, goodness.
 Bowntes, 12/13, 27/28, good qualities, kindnesses.
 Bowonte, 83/5, bounty.
 Boylynge tempestes, 26/31.
 Brende, 84/2, 115/7, burnt.
 Brenne, 12/7, to burn.
 Brennyng, 43/23, burning.
 Brennynge, 2/5, shining.
 Brode, 34/14, broadly, plainly.
 Brode shewyng, 47/5, vast expanse.
 Brotel, 63/11, brittle.
 Browht, 78/23, 129/16, brought.
 Brutel, 31/10, brittle, fragile.
 Brutelnesse, 40/1, brittleness, frailty.
 Brutus, 47/15.
 Brwtel, 63/9, brutal, bestial.
 Bryddes, Brydys, 95/5, 115/1, birds.
 Brydlis, Brydul, 15/17, 49/7, bridles, curbs.
 Brykes, 64/10 [Addit. MS. 10,340 'Crikes,' creeks], A.-Sax. *bryce*, E. E. *bruche*, *briche*, break, breach.
 Brystelede, 115/15, bristly.
 Busirides, 41/33, Busiris.
 Bybled, 53/26, covered over with blood.
 Bydewith, 111/30, watereth.
 Bydolven, 117/5, buried.
 Byen, 9/5, 27/23, buy.
 Byfallen, Byfallyn, 5/28, 20/16, befallen.
 Byfille, 8/8, befell.
 Byforn, 9/20, 21/5, before.
 Bygyled, 16/24, 67/13, beguiled.
 Bygyng, 112/10, beginning.
 Bygynnere, 116/24, beginner.
 Byhest, 116/2, promise.
 Byheten, 54/30, promise.
 Byhetyng, 48/5, promising.
 Byhoveth, 7/23, behoveth.
 Byhyhten, 55/16, 67/10, promised.
 Byhynde, 84/27, behind.
 Byknownen, 70/34, 113/24, acknowledged.
 Bylde, 30/30, build.
 Byleeven, 46/27, believe.
 Byleevest, 18/27, believest.
 By names, 66/7, additional names.
 Bynethe, 34/3, beneath.
 Bynomen, 55/18, taken from.
 Bynynyth, 93/11, taketh away.
 Byrafte, Byrefte, 52/22, 114/31, be-reft.
 Byreven, 62/30, bereave.
 Byrthe, 61/22, birth, origin.
 Byryht, 73/22, by right.
 Bysechen, Byshechen, 63/1, 68/4, beseech.
 Bysien, 4/5, to trouble.
 Bysowhte, 84/12, besought.
 Byspetten, 57/22, defouled.
 Bystowed, Bystowyd, 15/31, 83/22, bestowed.
 Bysyen, 101/26, trouble.
 Bysynesse, 56/15, labour, toil.
 Bytakest, 21/27, entrustest.
 Bytwene, Bytwyen, 25/31, 39/1, between.
 Bytwixen, 2/23, betwixt.
 Bytydde, Bytyde, 55/3, 109/17, happened.
 Bytydden, 121/12, befall.
 Bytydeth, 13/4, 20/15, betides, happens.
 Bytydyng, 116/14, happening.
 Bytyng, 50/7, biting, sharp.
 Bytyng, 56/15, heavy, severe.
 Bytyngly, 46/21, sarcastically.
 Bywaylen, 23/29, bewail.
 Bywepte, 114/24, wept for.
 Bywepstest, 17/15, bewept.
 Byweyledest, 17/15, bewailedst.
 Byweyleth, 95/29, bewaileth.
 Calyope, 84/9, Calliope.
 Cankyr, 16/20, 22, Cancer.
 Canyos, Canyus, 6/20, 11/6.
 Carayne, 91/1, carcase, corpse.
 Cariages, 9/2, taxes.
 Caste, 28/28, chaste.
 Castete, 25/18, chastity.
 Catoun, Caton, 47/16, 108/19, Cato.
 Catullus, 56/24.
 Caucasus, 45/4, the mountain.
 Caudencius, 9/31, one of Boethius's accusers.
 Caytyf, 13/16, 90/20, a wretched man.
 Celebrable, 114/29, commendable, noted.
 Celere, 23/33, cellar.
 Centauris, 114/30, Centaurs.
 Ceptre, 2/29, 43/19, sceptre.
 Cerberus, 84/13, 115/3, the porter of hell.

Certain, Certeyn, 132/10, 23, certain.
 Certes, 10/5, truly.
 Cesen, 57/29, cease.
 Challengede, 41/10, claimed.
 Chariets, 126/29, carts, carriages.
 Charyes, 92/13, chairs.
 Charyettes, 26/21, chariots.
 Chastysen, 112/22, to chastise.
 Chaucer's poems, "The Former Age," 36; and "Fortune," 38.
 Chayer, 13/29, 25/29, chair, seat.
 Cheere, 3/16, 7/17, face, countenance.
 Cheryce, 37/22, cherish.
 Chesen, 59/28, choose.
 Chesith, 130/5, chooseth.
 Cheyne, 118/10, chain.
 Chorus, 5/7, 103/22, the wind.
 Chymynees, 7/10, furnaces.
 Chynnyng, 17/27, cleft, chink. L. 'hiant e ualli robore.' [Addit. MS. 10,340 schynnyng, shining?]
 Chyrkyng, 16/26, groaning.
 Cicero's *Book of Divination*, 125/6.
 Circo, 25/32, circus.
 Cirtes, 95/12, Circe.
 Clarre, Clarree, 35/7, 36/16, a kind of wine.
 Claryouns, 35/17, trumpets.
 Cleere, 19/9, bright.
 Cleernesse, 26/20, brightness.
 Clepe, 10/21, call.
 Clepiat, 104/6, askest.
 Clepyn, 2/34, call.
 Clepyst, 29/9, callest.
 Cler, 31/5, serene.
 Cleven, 28/9, stick, cling, adhere.
 Clowdeles, 87/3, cloudless.
 Clowmbyn, 45/3, climbed, ascended.
 Clowtes, 6/10, pieces of torn clothes.
 Clyfte, 101/9, fissure, cleft.
 Clymbyn, 2/25, climb.
 Clyveth, 79/22, clingeth.
 Clyvyng, 41/22, 105/9, cleaving, sticking.
 Coempcion, 9/7, coemption.
 Coeterne, 134/17, coeternal.
 Coeveryn, 23/10, cover, obscure.
 Collacions, 97/20, collations.
 Collation, 128/29, comparison.
 Combryd, 74/10, troubled.
 Comen, 50/25, grow up.
 Committ, 12/10, convicted.

Commoevede, 84/11, moved.
 Commoevynge, 7/8, moving.
 Compaignie, 56/16, company.
 Comparysoned, 45/32, compared.
 Compaygne, 9/13, Campania.
 Compleyde, 3/25, complained.
 Complyssen, 96/24, accomplish.
 Compotent, 134/11, having the mastery.
 Compowne, 68/15, to compose.
 Compownen, 73/5, compose, form.
 Comprendyd, 4/3, comprehended.
 Comunalitees, 8/6, commonwealths.
 Comune, 11/28, common.
 Comyn, 1/9, 14/8, come.
 Condicional, 136/30, conditional.
 Condysyn, 33/27, condition.
 Confederacie, 41/26, conspiracy.
 Confuse, 103/2, confused.
 Confwndeth, 18/34, confoundeth.
 Confwndyd, 18/16, confounded.
 Congregasyn, 56/26, collection.
 Coningaste, 8/25, Conigastus.
 Conjecte, Conjecten, 17/20, 73/15, conjecture.
 Conjecteth, 120/23, conjectures.
 Conjoigned, 57/11, conjoined.
 Conjunction, 80/4, union.
 Conjuracion, 11/8, 41/25, conspiracy.
 Conseite, 70/7, opinion.
 Consequens, 65/33, consequence.
 Consoler, 9/16, counsellor.
 Constreynede, 2/10, contracted.
 Constreynyth, 116/20, restraineth, governeth.
 Consulers, 40/26, consuls.
 Consumpte, 47/19, consumed.
 Contemplative life, the, 2/22.
 Contienen, 90/31, contain.
 Contieneth, 128/16, containeth.
 Contrarios, 13/15, adverse.
 Contraryen, 119/20, to be opposed to, adverse to.
 Contre, 29/10, contrary.
 Contumacion, 110/6 [? continuation].
 Convenable, 107/34, fit, convenient.
 Convict, 12/15, convicted.
 Cop, 30/30, top, summit.
 Corage, 4/20, 7/21, 12/21, 53/27, 70/8, mind, spirit, courage.
 Coribandes, 103/19, name of people who think the moon is enchanted when she is eclipsed.

- Coriged, 97/30, corrected.
 Corigit, 113/4, correcteth.
 Corollarye, 72/2, 93/23, corollary.
 Corompen, 77/15, corrupt.
 Corone, Coroune, 72/2, 93/1, crown.
 Coroumpynge, 81/13, corruption.
 Corsed, 36/27, cursed.
 Corsednesse, 71/10, cursedness.
 Corumpe, 75/27, 114/4, to become corrupt.
 Corupsyun, 56/26, corruption, fetid matter.
 Cosynes, 83/24, consins.
 Countrefeten, 134/27, to counterfeit.
 Coupable, 5/23, guilty.
 Coveiteden, 40/27, coveted.
 Covenable, 76/21, 77/13, fit, convenient.
 Covertours, 92/11, 124/12, coverings.
 Coveryt, 20/33, covereth.
 Covetise, Coveytise, Coveytyse, 9/18, 12/19, 23/15, 56/12, covetousness.
 Coveyten, 47/8, covet.
 Covynes, 13/20, deceits, collusions.
 Cowched (printed 'toweded'), 23/34, laid, set. L. jacere.
 Cowpeled, 124/3, coupled.
 Cowth, 16/4, known.
 Coyn, 36/20, money.
 Creat, 78/6, created.
 Crepin, 132/29, creep.
 Cresus, 23/23, Croesus, the king of the Lydians.
 Crop, 54/7, top.
 Cruwel, Crwel, 1/15, 84/5, cruel.
 Crwelte, 10/5, cruelty.
 Cryed, 9/11, decreed.
 Curacion, 17/6, cure.
 Cure, 28/3, care.
 Cyprian, the accuser of Albinus, 9/22.
 Cyrus, the king, 23/23.
 Cyte, 51/2, seat.
 Cytesenis, 15/15, citizens.
 Dalf, 35/23, 117/4, dug, delved.
 Dampnacion, 10/8, condemnation.
 Dampned, 12/12, condemned.
 Damysel, 20/23, damsel.
 Dar, 26/18, dare.
 Darsthow, 32/16, darest thou.
 Dartes, 102/4, weapons.
 Daunten, 60/10, subdue.
 Dawntede, 114/30, subdued.
 Debonayre, Deboneyre, 14/9, 48/4, gentle.
 Debonayrely, 95/20, mildly.
 Deceyvable, 63/28, deception.
 Deceyvable, 60/18, deceptive.
 Decorat, 57/1, Decoratus, a buffoon and informer.
 Decretus, 10/23, decrees.
 Dede, 43/14, dead.
 Dede, 36/28, did.
 Deef, 1/15, deaf.
 Deepliche, 124/32, deeply.
 Deere, 25/14, dear.
 Deeyn, 111/18, to dye.
 Defaute, 11/14, fault, defect.
 Defendowr, 77/2, defender.
 Defeted, 20/1, enfeebled, weakened.
 Deffaute, 90/1, default.
 Deffendeth, 46/27, forbiddeth.
 Deffendyd, 23/8, forbidden.
 Deffenysshe, 116/13, defines.
 Deffyned, 52/14, defined.
 Deficulte, 44/32, difficulty.
 Defowled, 12/18, 115/7, defiled.
 Defowlen, 57/22, defile.
 Defowlyth, 54/4, defouleth.
 Degrees, 2/23, steps.
 Delices, Delycees, 26/3, 53/12, 62/5, 63/8, delights, voluptuousness, pleasures.
 Delitable, 20/18, delectable.
 Delitablely, 85/6, delightfully.
 Delites, Delycs, 62/1, 66/22, delights.
 Delvere, 117/14, a digger.
 Delye, 2/14, thin, fine.
 Demestow, 10/17, deernest thou.
 Dempne, 39/17, condemn.
 Denoyed, 69/22, 81/8, denied.
 Denyestow, 100/14, deniest thou.
 Dep, 79/10, deep.
 Departen, 117/27, separate.
 Departyd, 19/13, separated.
 Depnesse, 3/27, depth.
 Deppere, 17/20, 24/31, deeper.
 Dereworthe, 21/9, 28/6, precious.
 Derked, 2/19, darkened.
 Derken, Derkin, 93/28, 118/31, obscure, darken.
 Discovereth, 5/12, discovered.
 Descression, 73/1, discretion.
 Descryven, 78/20, describe.
 Descussed, 5/3, dispersed, scattered.

Desdaine, 56/23, disdain.
 Desermen, 7/15, disarm.
 Desertus, 13/6, deserts.
 Desiringes, 19/3, desires.
 Desordene, 24/20, inordinate.
 Despendyn, 31/16, spend, expend.
 Desputen, 129/15, dispute.
 Despyce, 30/29, despise.
 Despyseth, 47/12, despises.
 Dessendit, 91/9, descends.
 Desseveraunce, 75/31, separation.
 Desseyvable, 47/28, deceivable.
 Desseyvered, 93/6, dissevered.
 Desseyvesthow, 82/24, deceivest thou.
 Desseyvyed, 4/29, 17/24, 26/2, 74/10, deceived.
 Destempraunce, 77/1, severity.
 Destorbed, 10/15, hindered, prevented.
 Destorbeth, 77/33, disturbs.
 Destrat, 63/6, distracted.
 Destreyned, 42/25, constrained, bound.
 Destynable, 111/2, destined.
 Destynal, 105/20, fatal.
 Destyne, 105/4, destiny, fate.
 Determenye, 99/2, determine.
 Deth, 1/13, death.
 Devynyte, 7/31, divinity.
 Devysyon, 65/3, division.
 Deyed, 35/18, dyed, coloured.
 Deyen, 30/17, 35/9, die.
 Diffinissed, 91/17, defined.
 Digne, 30/1, 135/31, worthy, just.
 Digneliche, Dignely, 42/11, 70/1, worthily.
 Dignete, 12/16, dignity.
 Diogenes, 37/5.
 Dirked, 5/8, darkened.
 Dirknesse, 2/18, darkness.
 Discordable, 111/22, discordant.
 Discorden, 74/1, 107/23, disagree.
 Discordynge, 53/16, disagreeing, disaccordant.
 Discours, 128/29, judgment, reason.
 Disdaignen, 113/26, to disdain.
 Disencreaseth, 134/30, decreaseth.
 Dishert, 87/26, desert.
 Disordenaunce, 116/20, disorder.
 Disponede, 80/28, disposed.
 Disponith, 105/3, disposeth.
 Dispoilynge, 114/31, spoil, prey.
 Disputacion, 116/11, disputation.

Dissertes, 122/34, deserts.
 Dissimulen, 139/9, to dissemble.
 Dissimuloure, 38/23, dissembler.
 Dissipule, Dyssyppe, 62/18, 68/3, disciple.
 Distemperaunce, 90/23, intemperance.
 Distempre, 94/34, intemperate.
 Distingwed, 32/19, distinguished.
 Dite, 23/31, 60/20, ditty, play, tragedy.
 Divers, 70/31, diverse.
 Diversly, 19/11, going by different routes.
 Dolve, 117/8, should dig.
 Domes, 107/22, judgments.
 Domesman, 43/14, judge.
 Domesthow, 18/19, knowest thou.
 Don, 3/22, do.
 Doom, 118/14, judgment.
 Dowblede, 84/10, doubled.
 Dowhlesesse, 37/33, duplicity.
 Dowble vysage, 20/32, two-facedness.
 Dowgter, 28/32, daughter.
 Dowmb, 4/27, dumb.
 Dowtest, 17/21, doubttest.
 Dowtos, Downtous, Downtows, 2/9, 20/32, 48/22, 73/9, doubtful, doubted.
 Drawestow, 125/23, drawest thou.
 Drawht, 111/8, draught.
 Drede, 59/16, dread.
 Dredeles, 83/32, fearless.
 Dredful, 95/1, timid.
 Dressinge, 107/10, directing, ordering.
 Dressyth, 110/32, directeth.
 Dreynt, Dreynte, 1/18, 3/27, 114/25, 115/8, drowned, drenched.
 Dronken, Dronkyn, 35/12, 95/25, drank.
 Drowh, 8/33, drew.
 Dryf, 19/15, drive.
 Dulleth, 3/28, to become dull.
 Durablete, 78/2, durableness.
 Duren, 58/4, 76/13, 77/6, endured, to last.
 Dureth, 58/30, endureth.
 Dusked, 2/18, dusky.
 Dwwe, 14/17, due, orderly.
 Dwweelly, 14/19, duly.
 Dydalus, 82/25, Dædalus.
 Dyffynyssed, 69/17, defined.

Dylsyos, 24/31, delicious.
 Dyomedes, 115/5, Diomede.
 Dyrk, 65/19, dark.
 Dyrke, 60/16, evil, wicked.
 Dyrked, 3/19, darkened.
 Dysmaye, 24/5, dismay.
 Dyspeyre, 20/7, despair.
 Dyvydyd, 105/14, divideth.
 Dyvynenge, 122/8, divination.
 Dyvynor, 122/8, diviner.

 Eched, 60/27, increased.
 Echnynys, 64/16, sea-urchins.
 Eclipse, 103/19, eclipse.
 Eftsones, 54/10.
 Egal, 47/14, equal.
 Egaly, 122/4, equally, evenly.
 Egalyte, 29/14, equality, evenness
 (of mind).
 Egge, 36/19, edge.
 Egre, 16/19, 35/17, sharp, eager.
 Egreablete, 29/14, goodwill.
 Egren, 109/29, urge, excite.
 Ek, 27/32, 37/36, also.
 Elde, 1/9, old age.
 Elden, 44/1, become aged.
 Eldere, 70/15, 134/24, older.
 Eldres, 40/27, 61/27, forefathers.
 Eldyr fadyr, 28/2, grandfather.
 Eliaticis, the school of, 3/12.
 Elles, 17/9, else.
 Elyne, 114/16, Helen.
 Embelysed, 32/15, embellished,
 adorned.
 Emperice, 37/25, empress.
 Emprienpted, 130/31, imprinted.
 Emtded, 2/7, exhausted.
 Enander, 115/13, Evander.
 Enbasshinge, 86/1, a debasing.
 Enbracest, 32/21, embracest.
 Enbraseth, 128/15, embraceth.
 Encharged, 139/8, imposed.
 Enchaunteresse, 95/31, enchantress.
 Enclynynge, 79/4, embracing.
 Encres, 13/4, increase.
 Endamagen, 9/13, damage.
 Enditen, 1/3, to indite.
 Endyd, 98/31 [dedid = made dead,
 in Dr. Morris's edition].
 Enformasyoun, 20/15, instruction.
 Enformedest, Enformyd, 6/23, 8/2,
 informed, instructed.
 Enforseth, 20/5, desireth.
 Engendred, 27/3, begotten.

Enhanseth, 22/9, exalteth.
 Enhawsen, 94/19, advance, exalt,
 enhance.
 Enlaced, 62/28, 115/30, entangled,
 intertwined, perplexed.
 Enlaceth, 7/18, bindeth.
 Enoynted, 24/29, anointed.
 Enpeyren, 93/28, 108/27, impair.
 Enpoysonynge, 6/18, poisoning.
 Enpreynted, 129/20, imprinted.
 Ensamplle, 4/5, example.
 Ensampler, 68/20, exemplar.
 Ensauptyles, 58/32, examples.
 Enstablyshed, 105/7, established.
 Entalenten, 130/25, excite.
 Entechched, 94/4, defiled, polluted.
 Entente, 10/20, intention.
 Entenden, 117/3, to intend.
 Entendynge, 4/17, intent, looking
 steadfastly on.
 Entensyn, 17/28, intention.
 Ententes, 3/10, endeavours, labours.
 Ententyf, 6/33, 19/24, attentive.
 Ententyfly, 81/17, attentively.
 Entre, 18/15, 20/14, beginning.
 Entrechaunged, 102/20, inter-
 changed.
 Entrechaungynge, 14/18, 26/32,
 102/31, 117/30, interchanging.
 Entrecomunynge, 44/33, commerce,
 communication.
 Entrelaced, 82/25, intermingled, en-
 tangled.
 Entremedled, 42/21, intermixed.
 Entremetith, 82/11, intermeddled.
 Envenymeth, 94/10, poisoneth, in-
 fecteth.
 Envyronynge, 44/12, 112/3, encircle-
 ment, circumference.
 Envyrounde, Envyrownede, 22/29,
 59/20, surrounded.
 Epicurians, the, 6/5.
 Epicurus, 52/20.
 Erceules, 42/1, 104/13, 115/6, Her-
 cules.
 Ere, 1/15, ear.
 Ere, 56/14, plough.
 Eres, 49/16, ears.
 Eritage, 6/2, heritage.
 Erste, 75/8, first.
 Erthelyche, Erthelyethe, 41/8, 54/17,
 earthly.
 Erudice, 84/32, Eurydice.
 Escapin, 28/13, escape.

- Eschaufed, 14/15, 16/8, become hot, burned.
 Eschaufen, 57/30, make hot, chafe.
 Eschaufet, 110/16, hot, warm.
 Eschue, 59/15, avoid.
 Eschueth, 76/15, escheweth.
 Eschwen, 113/7, eschew.
 Est, 14/4, east.
 Est sones, 54/10, for 'Eftsones.'
 Estabelyssed, 9/8, established.
 Estable, 27/4, stable, firm.
 Estat, 14/15, 20/3, estate, state.
 Estatutes, 20/22, statutes.
 Eayere, 16/19, more easy.
 Eterne, fro eterne, 119/4, 121/10, 134/10, eternal, from eternity.
 Eternite, 133/19, eternity.
 Ether, 101/4, either.
 Ethna, 35/22, 40/23, Etna.
 Etin, 84/21, eat.
 Eufrates, 117/23, Euphrates.
 Eurippe, 22/5, Euripus.
 Eurus, 30/28, 95/10, the wind.
 Eurydyppys, 62/18, Euripides.
 Even, 35/5, evening.
 Evenelyche, Evenliche, Evenelyk, 16/9, 89/17, 111/23, evenly.
 Everich, Everych, 6/6, 28/7, 77/3, every.
 Everydel, 6/12, 20/34, all, every way, everything.
 Eve sterre, 14/2, evening star.
 Excercen, 41/18, to exercise, practise.
 Excercitacion, 109/8, exercise.
 Excussion, Excussyon, 8/15, 40/3, execution.
 Exil, Exilinge, 6/18, 29/9, exile, banishment.
 Exiteth, 130/29, exciteth.
 Eyen, 2/5, 63/22, eyes.
 Eyr, 31/6, 103/13, air.
 Eyres, 28/30, heirs.
 Faaden, 93/11, fade.
 Fabrycius, 47/15, Fabricius.
 Faderes, 11/24, fathers.
 Faigne, Feigne, 71/3, feign.
 Falsnesse, 15/33, falsity.
 Famuleres, Famyleres, 6/14, 11/17, familiars.
 Familylarte, 20/5, familiarity.
 Fantesye, 36/21, fancy, inclination.
 Fason, 49/8, fashion.
 Fastere, 18/30, quicker.
 Fastne, 14/32, 87/15, fasten.
 Fastnede, 5/18, fastened.
 Fawht, 115/10, fought.
 Faylyde, 51/10, failed.
 Faylynge, 134/16, ending.
 Fayr, 20/10, fair, good.
 Feblere, 65/9, feeble.
 Feblesse, 59/25, 63/27, 87/29, feebleness.
 Feele fold, 20/4, manifold.
 Feelynge, 76/17, living.
 Feerse, 114/24, fierce.
 Feffedest, 26/1, paid tribute to, endowedst.
 Felawe, 57/3, fellow-worker.
 Felawes, 48/22, fellows.
 Felawshipith, 86/31, accompanyeth.
 Felistow, 7/20, feelest thou.
 Fellyche, 26/28, fiercely.
 Felnesse, 16/27, fierceness.
 Felonos, 11/16, 71/19, wicked, depraved.
 Felonos, 7/13, felons.
 Felonyes, 96/31, crimes.
 Fer, Ferre, 15/6, far.
 Ferme, 14/32, make firm.
 Firmely, 122/16, firmly.
 Fern, 50/24, ferns, weeds.
 Ferne, 47/9, far-off, distant.
 Ferthe, 44/17, fourth.
 Fertherest, 106/14, farthest.
 Fesissien, 5/17, physician.
 Festyvaly, 46/10, gaily.
 Fette, 36/22, fetched.
 Fey, 87/31, faith, truth.
 Feynede, 46/17, feigned.
 Feynen, 134/27, to feign.
 Feynest, 20/2, faintest.
 Fichched, 78/28, fixed, implanted.
 Fille, 33/23, abundance.
 Flaumbe, Flawmbe, Flambe, 26/22, 40/23, 103/11, 111/18, flame.
 Fleen, 118/15, to be shunned.
 Fleen, 30/33, fly from.
 Fleetyn, 28/12, pass away.
 Fleetyng, 6/30, fitting.
 Fleejes, Flejes, 35/7, 35/9, fleece.
 Flenie, 19/16, banish.
 Flen, 66/15, 97/33, to flee, fly from.
 Fles, 36/18, fleece.
 Fleten, Fletyn, Fletyng, 18/22, 19/11, 56/11, 107/8, 117/29, pass away, flow.

- Fleth, 62/23, flies.
 Fletith, 4/10, aboundeth.
 Flettynge, 27/2, changing, fickle.
 Flitte, 53/20, 67/8, remove.
 Floteryn, 78/23, float.
 Floterynge, 68/15, floating.
 Flowren, 102/12, flourish.
 Flowrith, 85/24, flourisheth.
 Flyttynge, 21/13, 63/120, fleeting, changing, fickle.
 Foddre, 115/4, fodder.
 Foleyen, 52/27, act foolishly.
 Folueth, Folweth, 61/15, 71/7, followeth.
 Folyly, 6/30, 107/8, foolishly.
 Fookkes, 8/26, folk, people.
 Fool, 4/15, foul.
 Fool, 24/15, full.
 Fooldesthow, 82/27, foldest thou.
 Forbrak, 85/10, broke, interrupted.
 Fordoon, 49/8, undo, destroy.
 Fordryven, 6/25, driven about.
 Forehevyd, Forheved, 10/3, 133/9, forehead.
 Foreyne, 9/30, foreign.
 Forgoon, 63/7, forego.
 Forknowyng, 138/21, foreknowledge.
 Forleffen (*pret.* of *forleve*), 5/4, left.
 Forlete, Forleten, Forletyn, 2/18, 56/15, 61/30, to forsake, leave, neglect.
 Forleteth, Forletith, Forleetheth, 3/28, 14/15, 34/10, forgetteth, leaveth, forsaketh, loses.
 Forlong, 93/1, furlong.
 Forlorn, 94/22, lost.
 Forlyved, 61/29, living.
 Forlyven, 61/20, degenerate from.
 Forpampred, 36/5, overpampered.
 Fors, 38/13, force; 'no fors,' no matter.
 Forseyde, 10/8, 128/25, foresaid.
 Forswerynge, 14/24, perjury.
 Forthere, 28/15, 90/13, to further, promote.
 Forthi, Forthy, 6/24, 18/19, 28/16, therefore.
 Forthinke, 28/15, grieved, sorry.
 Fortroden, 85/25, trodden upon, trampled.
 Fortuit, 117/11, fortune.
 Fortune, the blind goddess, 20/33.
 Fortunel, 117/32, fortuitous.
 Fortounous, 17/11, 29/31, 102/26, fortuitous.
 Fortunows, 17/9, fortunes.
 Forward, 54/32, foremost.
 Forwes, 36/12, furrows.
 Forwh, 132/30, furrow.
 Forwitere, 138/34, foreknower.
 Foryeeten, 18/20, forgotten.
 Foryetyng, 45/20, forgetfulness.
 Foryetyng, 18/17, 79/20, forgetting.
 Foundement, 77/5, foundation.
 Fowle, 14/30, 31/12, 52/35, bad, foul.
 Fowleste, 7/3, foulest.
 Fownden, 62/14, found.
 Fowndyn, 30/26, establish.
 Fram, 14/14, from.
 Freele, 41/14, 48/11, frail.
 Frelenesse, 87/30, frailty.
 Freten, Fretyn, 53/31, 114/25, 115/6, devour, eat up.
 Frounce, 5/1, flounce.
 Fructefyng, 3/4, fruitful.
 Fructes, 32/20, fruits.
 Frut, 23/12, fruit.
 Fulfyd, 56/4, fulfilled.
 Fulfylled, 12/34, 25/32, satisfied.
 Fulfyllenge, 62/2, satisfying.
 Furijs, 84/15, the three Furies.
 Futures, *adj. pl.*, 135/17.
 Fwonde, 18/15, found.
 Fychchen, 31/2, 69/6, fix, fasten.
 Fylonye, 56/28, villainy.
 Fylthe, 10/11, vileness.
 Fyn, 54/20, 78/35, end.
 Fynyshed, 97/11, finished.
 Fyrthest, 106/19, furthest.
 Gabbe I?, 34/22, am I deceived?
 Gaddered, 88/15, gathered.
 Gadery, 16/25, gather.
 Gaines, 90/6, gains, rewards. L. leuia aut ludicra praemia.
 Galentyne, 36/16, a dish in ancient cookery made of sopped bread and spices (*Hallwell*).
 Galles, 37/17, galls.
 Gapeden, 9/19, to desire, be greedy for.
 Gapynge, 24/18, desires.
 Garnement, 5/1, garment.
 Gastnesse, 59/13, terror, fear.

Gayus Cesar Germeynes son, 11/7.
 Gemmys, 36/30, precious stones.
 Gentellesse, Gentilesse, 40/11, 61/9, nobility.
 Geometryens, 71/33, geometricians.
 Gerdoned, 93/21, rewarded.
 Gerdonyng, 112/20, rewarding.
 Gerdoun, Gerdoun, 12/1, 94/1, reward.
 Gerneers, 9/4, storehouses of corn.
 Gesse, Gessen, 10/29, 11/26, 51/28, to suppose, estimate, deem.
 Gessing, 13/5, 13/12, opinion, supposing.
 Gest, 26/12, guest.
 Gestys, 41/34, guests.
 Gladyn, Gladyd, 25/3, 28/31, glad-den.
 Glosynge, 26/1, deceitful.
 Glotonos, 16/29, greedy.
 Gnodded, 36/11, pounded.
 Gobet, 35/23, 117/5, a bit (of gold).
 Godhed, 95/21, divinity.
 Goeddes, 32/22, goods.
 Goost, 27/30, spirit, ghost.
 Goth, 47/10, goeth.
 Goths, Theodoric the king of the, 9/3.
 Gouvernaunce, 21/32, 57/3, control, government.
 Governayle, 17/22, government.
 Gouvernementus, 8/12, governments.
 Goye, 139/11, joy.
 Grauntisthow, 75/20, grantest thou.
 Grec, 83/15, Greek.
 Greek letters wrought on the dress of Philosophy, 2/21-24.
 Gretnesse, 63/13, size.
 Grettyst, 83/11, greatest.
 Grevos, 8/21, grievous.
 Grobbe up, 36/29, grub up.
 Grond, 36/15, did grind.
 Greynes, 50/25, grains (of corn).
 Greythed, 12/8, devised, prepared.
 Gyauntz, 82/13, giants.
 Gyderesse, 85/12, a female guide.
 Gydynge, 86/22, guiding.
 Gynnes, 64/7, snares, traps.
 Gyle, 55/23, guile, stratagem.
 Gylt, 10/12, guilt, crime.
 Gyse, 55/31, 104/32, guise, mode.
 Gyser, 84/21, gizzard.

Ha, 81/1, have.

Habownden, 13/20, abound.

Habowndeth, 64/13, abounds.
 Habytacule, 44/31, habitation.
 Halden, 28/11, to hold.
 Haldith, 79/22, holdeth.
 Haled, 54/7, pulled.
 Haleth, 48/17, draweth, draggeth.
 Halt, 39/6, 44/13, 49/10, 87/8, 130/19, holds.
 Hap, 116/14, fortune.
 Hapes, 17/9, haps.
 Hardnesse, 102/29, hardship.
 Hardyly, 23/6, boldly.
 Harmes, 13/3, evils.
 Hasted, 1/10, hastened.
 Hasthow, 15/18, hast thou.
 Hat, 28/30, 59/20, hath.
 Hates, Hatrede, 9/22, 101/26, hatred.
 Haunted, 5/19, frequented.
 Haunten, 41/18, to practise, exercise.
 Havyng, 24/22, possessing.
 Hawes, 36/7, berries of the dog rose.
 Heere, 25/28, their.
 Heeres, 1/11, hairs.
 Hef, 2/12, raised, heaved.
 Hele, Heele, 18/16, 52/11, 73/26, health.
 Hemward, 9/26, those.
 Henten, 9/21, to seize.
 Henteres, 7/3, hunters.
 Hepin, 118/33, heap up, increase.
 Hepyth, 102/26, increaseth.
 Herberweden, 41/34, harboured, lodged.
 Herbyform, 17/15, 60/32, heretofore.
 Hercules, 114/29. *See* Ercules.
 Heren, 100/13, hear.
 Heres, 50/25, ears (of corn).
 Herkne, 49/17, harken.
 Hertes, 56/19, hearts.
 Hertes, 83/32, harts.
 Herthe, 119/13, earth.
 Herthely, 50/13, earthly.
 Hertyd, 43/13, hearted.
 Heryed, 86/5, praised.
 Herynus, 74/14, the river Hermus.
 Hesperus, 14/2, 111/19, the evening star.
 Hete, 18/29, heat.
 Heved, 1/12, 84/14, head.
 Hevenlyche, 3/33, heavenly.
 Hevith, 130/6, heaveth.
 Hevyere, 20/24, heavier.

- Hevyeth, 133/5, to make heavy.
 Heye, Heygh, 47/13, 92/13, 103/13, high.
 Heyere, 111/9, higher.
 Heyeste, Heyiste, 2/22, 128/15, 113/6, highest.
 Heyhte, 5/7, called.
 Heyhte, 86/21, 111/12, height.
 Heyoste, 47/14, highest.
 Hielde, 24/8, pour.
 Hihte, 25/31, called.
 Hit, 121/22, it.
 Holden, 46/22, held.
 Holdestow, 21/8, holdest thou.
 Holsom, 17/19, 35/11, wholesome.
 Holy howses, 9/34, sanctuaries for refuge.
 Holyly, 70/24, wholly, entirely.
 Homer, the sweet-mouthed, 119/7.
 Hond, 36/10, hand.
 Hongyr, 56/1, hunger.
 Honte, 64/9, hunt.
 Honyede, 54/2, honied.
 Hool, Hoole, 66/13, 69/31, whole.
 Hoolnesse, 107/19, wholeness.
 Hooly, 14/22, holy.
 Hoomlich, 83/8, homely.
 Hoope, 10/34, 19/16, hope.
 Hoore, 1/11, hoary.
 Hoote, 14/8, hot.
 Hoot yren, 10/4, hot iron. [Dr. Morris's edition reads "hoke of iren" = "iron hook."]
- Hors, 50/29, horse.
 Hovyd, 137/26, behoved.
 Howndes of the palyse, 9/17, the officers of the palace.
 Hows, 52/26, house.
 Humblesse, 63/4, humility.
 Hungry tyme, 9/11, time of famine.
 Hurtelith, Hurtelyn, 20/12, 130/16, to rush against, oppose.
 Hust, 35/17, hushed.
 Hy, 19/12, high.
 Hyden, 64/7, set.
 Hydere, 117/9, hider.
 Hyen, 78/25, come together.
 Hyene, 39/3, hyæna.
 Hyere, 2/13, higher.
 Hyhten, 5/10, 43/20, 115/1, called.
 Hyhteth, 4/9, adorneth.
 Hyr, 53/26, their.
 Hyre, 1/19, her.
 Hyye, 14/13, high.
- Iben, 126/10, been.
 Iblamyd, 3/16, to be blamed.
 Ibowed, 107/6, bent, turned.
 Ibowht, 84/25, bought.
 Icawht, 74/5, caught, entangled.
 Icorompd, 118/22, corrupt.
 Icovered, 103/16, covered.
 Idowted, 127/14, doubted.
 Idra, 115/6, Hydra.
 Ifelawshipped, 42/9, associated, united.
 Iflyt, 4/2, flitted, removed.
 Igetyn, 24/16, gotten.
 Ihardyd, 103/24, hardened.
 Ihevyd, 133/10, raised, heaved.
 Ihydd, 96/3, hidden.
 Ijoigned, 42/10, joined.
 Ikountynued, 132/30, continued.
 Ilad, 25/26, 134/20, led.
 Ileten, 101/16, permitted.
 Ilorn, 48/27, lost.
 Imaked, 68/21, 134/24, made.
 Imedled, 17/1, mingled.
 Imperial, 3/20, august.
 Imperisse, 85/24, empress.
 Imperiye, 40/25, government.
 Impetrent, 123/21, obtain. [See Dr. Morris's note on Emprenten.]
 Implieth, 117/32, enfoldeth, in-closeth.
 Inconvenyent, 123/1, inconveni-ence.
 Inde, 95/20, India.
 Indus, 74/15, the river.
 Infect, 103/14, infected.
 Infinite, Infynyte, 105/12, 134/1, infinity, without end.
 Infirme, 119/9, feeble.
 Infortune, 62/19, 86/13, misfor-tune.
 Inmoevablete, 134/28, immobility.
 Innerest, Inneryste, 106/10, 107/26, innermost.
 Inowgh, Inowh, 7/26, 36/11, enough.
 Inparfyt, 69/23, imperfect.
 Impressed, 130/12, impressed.
 In somme, 10/12, in the end.
 Instauce, 130/22, presence.
 Insyhte, Inshyte, 18/34, 124/7, in-sight.
 Interesse, 40/9, interest.
 Inwith, 21/21, within.
 Iplited, 5/1, pleated, folded.
 Iplownged, 111/19, plunged.

Iproved, 134/10, proved.
 Isene, Iseyn, 56/29, 124/32, 127/18, seen.
 Isent, 5/10, sent.
 Ishad, 35/17, 54/5, 102/15, shed, scattered.
 Ishet, 132/26, shut.
 Ishewyd, 33/7, 70/2, shown.
 Isped, 125/8, made clear, determined.
 Issest, 82/27, issuest.
 Issw, 17/3, issue.
 Istrengthened, 136/14, strengthened.
 Ithewed, 108/22, behaved.
 Ithrongen, 44/27, pressed, squeezed.
 Itowched, 16/3, touched.
 Itreted, 102/14, handled, performed.
 Iwist, 120/19, 127/10, 28, known.
 Iwitnessed, 134/9, witnessed.

 Jangelynge, 53/32, chattering.
 Jape worthi, 122/8, ridiculous.
 Joignen, 83/32, to join.
 Jolyte, 62/12, pleasure.
 Jowwes, 9/19, jaws.
 Joyngture, 32/5, juncture, joining.
 Jubyter, Juppiter, 23/33, 37/27, Jupiter, Jove.
 Juge, 12/12, a judge; 42/15, to judge.
 Juggement, 2/9, judgment.

 Kachche, 64/7, catch.
 Kacus, 115/13, Cacus.
 Kalm, 23/13, calm.
 Kaptebite, 23/28, captivity.
 Kartere, 126/28, carter, coachman.
 Kartes, 126/29, carts, carriages.
 Karve, 35/14, cut.
 Kaves, 5/11, caves.
 Kawth, 23/24, caught.
 Kaytyfs, 119/1, caitiffs.
 Kembd, 14/24, 58/20, combed.
 Kene, 38/27, sharp.
 Kerve, 50/23, cut.
 Keye, 81/12, helm.
 Klenness, 105/1, clearness.
 Klothinge, 32/33, clothing.
 Klowdes, 119/14, clouds.
 Klyfte, 65/1, cleft.
 Knettynge, 116/15, knitting.
 Knoleche, 87/1, knowledge.
 Knowleching, 130/23, knowledge.
 Knowstow, 4/23, knowest thou.

Knowy, 131/32, knowledge.
 Knowynge, 18/5, 34/11, 48/25, knowledge.
 Knyt, 59/29, 86/32, knight, soldier.
 Kontek, 101/28, contest, strife.
 Korn, 50/24, corn.
 Korven, 2/26, 6/9, cut, rent, tear.
 Koude, 115/9, could.
 Kragges, 117/24, crags.
 Krept, 17/26, crept.
 Kunnyng, 10/8, knowledge.
 Kuttinge, 104/11, 114/20, cutting.
 Kyd, 37/16, known.
 Kynde (of), 34/12, naturally.
 Kyndeli, Kyndeliche, 79/15, 89/4, naturally.
 Kynredes, 28/25, 47/11, kindred, families.
 Kythen, 40/1, make known, show.

 Lache, 95/3, slow, lazy.
 Lad, 23/25, 126/19, led.
 Laddres, 2/24, ladders.
 Lafte, 48/23, left.
 Lakkit, 88/3, lacketh.
 Lambyssh, 37/20, lamblike.
 Languesse, 96/27, languish.
 Languyssesst, 20/1, languishest.
 Langwissynge, 101/19, languishing.
 Lappe, 4/33, flap.
 Largesse, 31/18, liberality.
 Lasse, 68/32, less.
 Last, 28/23, lasteth.
 Lat, 19/16, 54/8, let.
 Late, 103/11, last.
 Laued, 84/8, sang.
 Laus, Lavse, 30/32, 106/21, loose, free.
 Leche, 7/23, 89/25, physician, doctor.
 Leef, 25/14, dear.
 Leese, Leesyn, 29/29, 30/9, 55/27, 110/2, lose.
 Leeseth, 14/2, loseth.
 Leest, 29/8, smallest.
 Leeste weye, 126/11, least way, least wise.
 Leesynge, 109/34, loss.
 Leesynge, Lesing, 10/28, 121/28, lies, falsehoods.
 Leeves, 14/10, leaves (of trees, etc.).
 Lemes, lymes, 95/27, 96/2, limbs.
 Lengere, 41/1, 75/32, longer.

- Leten, 5/26, to leave; 48/18, to esteem.
 Leve, 99/25, permission, leave.
 Levelful, 5/26, 10/27, 96/16, lawful, allowable.
 Leven, 99/19, believe.
 Lever, 4/24, more likely.
 Leveth, 24/23, liveth.
 Leveth, 108/9, alloweth, giveth.
 Levynge, 7/5, 34/12, living, daily life.
 Liggeth, 47/19, lieth.
 Liggynge, 114/25, lying.
 Litarge, 4/28, lethargy.
 Litestere, 36/17, a dyer.
 Lith, 129/30, lieth.
 Lith, 95/4, light.
 Lithly, 126/26, quickly, easily.
 Looketh, 21/16, looketh.
 Lokyn, 87/16, look.
 Lookynge, 4/18, 5/18, 74/17, 126/31, sight.
 Lorel, 13/21, a wretch.
 Lorn, 23/7, 34/33, lost.
 Lorshippe, 58/23, lordship, power.
 Loth, 27/29, loath.
 Lucifere, Lucyfer, 14/5, 50/28, 111/20, Lucifer, the morning star.
 Lukan, 108/17, Lucian.
 Luxures, 62/8, luxuries.
 Lybye, 115/13, Lybia.
 Lydyens, 23/23, the Lydians.
 Lye, 26/5, lay.
 Lyfly, 2/6, lifelike.
 Lyhte goodes, 1/17, temporal goods.
 Lyhtes, 14/2, lights.
 Lyhtneth, 99/23, enlighteneth.
 Lykerous, Lykoros, 37/27, 57/4, lecherous.
 Lykned, 10/5, 94/31, likened.
 Lykynges, 20/31, pleasures.
 Lymes, 55/33, limbs.
 Lynage, 28/25, lineage.
 Lyouns, 53/23, lions.
 Lyssheth, 22/11, laughs at.
 Lythly, 6/30, 35/4, easily.
 Lythnesse, 3/33, 77/11, light, brightness.
 Lytul, 17/15, little.
 Maad, 27/30, weary, dejected.
 Madyr, 36/17, a red dye.
 Magistrat, 57/1, magistracy.
 Maked, 2/14, 10/33, made.
 Maledye, 3/6, disease.
 Malefice, 12/33, sorcery.
 Malice, 12/31, wickedness.
 Manassinge, Manasyngge, 30/29, 92/14, threatening, menacing.
 Manesses, 7/8, 21/18, menaces.
 Marchus tullius, 45/2, 125/4, Marcus Tullius Cicero.
 Mareys, Marys, 44/21, 76/24, marsh.
 Margaretes, 74, note 4, pearls.
 Marmorike, 95/17, ? Marmarica, part of Libya, between Cyrene and Egypt.—*Lempriere*.
 Maryaage, 114/15, marriage.
 Maryes, 76/31, pith, marrow (*medulle*).
 Mast, 36/7, beech nuts.
 Maugre, Mawgre, 55/18, 21, in spite of.
 Maysteresse, 10/17, mistress.
 Maystow, 18/9, 77/3, mayest thou.
 Maystrye, 8/19, masterhood.
 Meche, 24/15, 30/15, much.
 Mede, 72/2, meed, reward.
 Medleth, 19/7, 74/16, 95/13, mixeth.
 Medlynge, 12/17, mixing.
 Meedes, Meedis, 35/20, 90/6, rewards.
 Meene, 68/27, mean; 114/4, the mean, or middle path.
 Meenelyche, 19/2, moderate.
 Melle, 36/6, mill.
 Menbrys, 61/25, bodies.
 Meneden, 116/23, meant, intended.
 Menelaus, 114/16.
 Meracle, 104/5, miracle.
 Mercurie, 95/21, Mercury.
 Mermaydenes, 3/13, mermaids.
 Mervayles, 20/4, marvellous.
 Merveylen, 32/15, 83/23, to marvel.
 Merveylynge, 5/14, wondering.
 Mery, Merye, 31/2, 66/1, pleasant.
 Meryly, 46/10, pleasantly.
 Merynesse, 52/4, pleasure.
 Meschef, 27/20, mischief.
 Mesure, 2/11, stature.
 Mesuren, 51/27, to measure.
 Metes, 35/2, fruits of the earth; 53/24, meats, food.
 Meward, 1/19, towards me.
 Meyne, 33/1, 86/4, servants, domestics.
 Misericorde, 84/23, mercy, pity.

- Mo, 93/33, more.
 Moche, 13/5, many.
 Mochel, 38/11, 62/13, great.
 Mochel, 32/12, much.
 Moedes, 20/24, *L. modos*, measures, tunes, strains.
 Moene, 4/1, the Moon; 111/15, the clerk of the Moon.
 Moevable, 103/26, mobile, fickle.
 Moeven, Moevynge, 4/5, 62/7, 134/29, to move, moving.
 Moevynge, 101/26, motion.
 Mokeren, 31/17, hoarding up.
 Mokeres, 31/17, misers.
 Moleste, 66/19, trouble, grief.
 Monstre, 20/5, prodigy.
 Moore, 100/24, greater.
 Moost, 6/27, 29/6, chief, most.
 Moot, 27/31, 30/7, must.
 Morter, 36/15, mortar.
 Morwe, 14/4, morning.
 Mosten (*pl.*), 129/22, must.
 Mosthow, 75/21, must thou.
 Mot, 60/10, must.
 Mot, Moten, 28/11, 59/6, might.
 Mous, 41/10, mouse.
 Mowe, 19/3, 25/3, may.
 Mowen, 16/18, 19/5, be able.
 Mowht, 8/5, mouth.
 Mowinge, 92/1, moving, motion.
 Mowrnynge, 54/5, mourning.
 Mowynge, 97/1, ability, power.
 Moyste, 30/31, 111/24, moist, soft.
 Muable, 104/28, movable.
 Musculis, 131/9, mussels.
 Musuciens, 42/19, musicians.
 Musus, Mysus, 41/10, 11, mice.
 Musyce, 20/23, Music.
 Mutabylyte, 63/21, changeableness.
 Mutacyouns, 18/22, changes.
 Myhtestow, 6/19, thou mightest.
 Myntyng, 3/29, purposing, endeavouring.
 Mynystreth, 61/23, administers.
 Myrthles, 102/28, pleasures.
 Myrye, 113/9, pleasant.
 Mys, 102/20, badly, wrongly.
 Myseyes, 8/32, grievances, troubles.
 Mysknowynge, 48/13, 79/17, ignorant, ignorance.
 Mystorneth, 54/22, misturneth, misleadeth.
 Mys weyes, 79/2, 116/6, wrong pathis.
 Nadris, 132/31, adders, snakes.
 Naked, 115/21, to make naked.
 Nameles, 102/11, unrenowned.
 Namelyche, 97/4, especially.
 Narice, 95/11, Narycia, or Naryx.
 Nart, 15/7, art not.
 Narwh, 44/26, narrow.
 Nas, 17/24, 36/9, was not.
 Nasyoun, 44/29, 57/26, nation.
 Nat, 1/13, 15/7, not.
 Natheles, Natles, 2/25, 21/6, 81/18, nevertheless.
 Naturely, Natureli, 14/22, 75/23, 118/13, naturally.
 Nayteth, 1/16, refuseth.
 Ne, 67/6, know.
 Necesseden, 68/14, necessitated.
 Nedly, 66/8, of necessity.
 Nedy, 22/27, in need.
 Negardye, 39/21, misers.
 Negh, 106/8, nigh.
 Nel, 80/16, will not.
 Nembrot, 37/29, Nimrod.
 Nere, 5/26, 17/17, were not.
 Nero, 43/7, 58/19, 59/27, the emperor.
 Nethereste, 2/20, 25, lowest, nethermost.
 Neweliche, 95/18, newly.
 Newith, 106/32, reneweth.
 Neygh, 103/8, nigh.
 Neysshebour, 25/14, 45/17, neighbour.
 Nhyht, 14/3, night.
 Nil, 84/21, will not.
 Nis, 6/29, 31/12, 122/17, is not.
 Nobely, 2/24, perfectly.
 Noblesse, 28/25, nobleness.
 Noblye, 23/30, nobility, nobleness.
 Node, 59/6, need.
 Nolde, 24/13, 29/15, 55/6, would not.
 Nolden nat, 9/33, would not.
 Nomyus, 56/25, Nonius, a Consul of Rome.
 None, 3/1, 77/8, no.
 Nonepower, 59/7, impotence.
 Nory, Norry, Norye, 5/23, 67/20, 78/27, nursing, pupil.
 Noryse, 5/18, nurse.
 Norysse, 61/29, nurse, nourish.
 Noryssed, 4/19, nourished.
 Norysshyng, Noryssynge, 32/25, 76/30, nourishment, support.

- Not, 17/20, 52/25, know not.
 Noteful, 3/15, useful.
 Nother, 124/29, neither.
 Nothus, 43/22, 50/27, the south wind
 Notus.
 Nower, 57/29, nowhere.
 Nowmbyr, 4/3, 68/22, number.
 Noysen, 61/27, to brag, boast, make
 a noise about.
 Nyce, 115/21, foolish.
 Nyht, 87/3, night.
 Nyllynge, 76/11, 118/19, being un-
 willing.
 Nytt, 88/9, wilt not.
 Nystyst, 80/9, knew not.

 O, 31/23, a, one.
 Obeysaunt, 8/5, 21/33, obedient.
 Objecte, 130/24, presented.
 Occian, 111/18, ocean.
 Ocupye, 114/4, to seize.
 Offence, 36/19, hurt, damage.
 Offencion, 13/3, offence.
 Offense, 57/2, offending.
 Oftyme, 109/1, oft-times.
 Olyfauntz, 63/13, elephants.
 Onknowyn, 36/6, unknown.
 Onsufferabele, 20/7, unsufferable,
 intolerable.
 Oo, 15/14, 74/2, one.
 Oonis, 122/20, once.
 Oonly, 133/5, only.
 Oonyd, 105/16, united.
 Oores, 35/14, oars.
 Oost, 6/28, host, number.
 Oostesse, 95/23, hostess.
 Oother, 5/15, 34/2, other.
 Ootherweys, 128/5, otherwise.
 Openen, 116/2, to open, show.
 Opyllon, 9/30, one of Boethius's
 accusers.
 Or, 4/31, 62/16, 97/7, ere, before.
 Ordene, Ordenely, 80/25, 86/3,
 109/16, orderly.
 Ordenoure, 81/24, 86/4, ordainer.
 Ordinat, 7/4, ordered, settled.
 Ordure, 19/10, filth.
 Orphelyn, 25/12, orphaned.
 Orpheus, 83/28, the poet.
 Ostelmentus, 33/21, furniture, goods.
 Outrely, 23/2, utterly.
 Overcomere, 4/3, conqueror.
 Overmochel, 62/13, over much, very
 much.

 Overold, 6/21, very old.
 Overthrowen, 13/23, prostrate.
 Overthrowynge, Overthrowenge,
 3/27, 47/3, 109/28, forward, head-
 strong.
 Overtymeliche, 1/11, untimely.
 Overwelneeth, 26/31, tosseth,
 rolleth.
 Owen, 70/19, ought.
 Ow, 17/18, 87/20, the exclamation
 "O!"
 Owhtest, 6/24, 48/18, ought.
 Owtereste, Owtterest, 43/16, 70/1,
 extremest, remotest.
 Owterly, Owtrely, 19/26, 47/19,
 85/9, 112/17, utterly.
 Owtrage, 33/24, 35/4, 36/5, excess.
 Owtrayen, 61/19, 'ultra viare,' go
 or diverge from?
 Owthorw, 7/10, out through.
 Oystrys, 131/9, oysters.

 Paale, 26/24, pale, vanishing away.
 Paas, 12/11, paces.
 Paied, 36/3, satisfied.
 Painted, 87/3, depicted.
 Palys, 15/22, pale; 17/27 (L. uelut
 hiant e ualli robore).
 Palyt, 26/22, paleth.
 Papynian, 59/29, Papinian.
 Parchemyn, 129/22, parchment.
 Parfit, Parfyt, 4/20, 28/20, 65/5,
 perfect.
 Parfytlyche, Parfytly, 68/20,
 104/10, perfectly.
 Parsoneres, 132/15, sharers, par-
 takers.
 Parthes, 45/5, the Parthians.
 Partles, 93/20, without a share.
 Party, 29/8, part.
 Paulyn, Pawlus, 9/16, 23/27, a Consul
 of Rome.
 Paysyble, 36/1, peaceable.
 Pées, 111/13, peace.
 Pene, 53/23, Phœnicia. L. poeni
 leones.
 Peraventure, 11/13, peradventure.
 Percen, 63/23, 96/7, to pierce.
 Percyens, 23/27, Persians.
 Perdurable, 2/16, 13/29, 27/3, in-
 perishable.
 Perdurably, 77/7, 128/14, everlast-
 ing, imperishably.
 Perdurablete, 45/23, immortality.

- Performe, 52/29, afford, furnish.
 Perise, 44/3, perish.
 Periseth, 76/6, perisheth.
 Perles, 64/12, pearls.
 Perturba, 18/33, perturbation.
 Perturbacyon, Perturbasyoun, 3/25, 16/17, perturbation.
 Perverted, 6/15, destroyed.
 Pesyble, Peysyble, 15/2, 69/9, quiet, placid.
 Peyne, 9/20, 12/1, 122/24, punishment.
 Peyntyd, 87/4, painted.
 Phebus, 5/13, 16/21, 86/31, Phæbus.
 Philosophy, as she appeared to Boethius, 2, *et seq.*; her discourse with Boethius, 5, *et seq.*
 Pictagoras, 12/24, Pythagoras.
 Pitowsly, 23/28, piteously.
 Pittyth, 109/30, putteth.
 Plato, 5/32, 8/5, 68/3, 79/31, 80/1, 134/15.
 Playnynges, 22/19, complaining.
 Plente, 134/32, fulness.
 Plenteuously, 16/4, abundantly.
 Plentivos, 50/22, yielding abundantly, fertile.
 Plentyvous, Plentyvos, 3/4, 4/10, 52/29, plentiful, affluent.
 Pleten, 22/16, argue, plead.
 Pletynges, 55/22, pleadings, debates.
 Playesthow, 82/24, playest thou.
 Playne, 11/10, 21/1, complain.
 Playnede, 84/4, complained.
 Playnesthow, 23/2, complainest thou.
 Playnly, Playnlyche, 18/15, 46/4, plainly.
 Playntes, 86/15, complaints.
 Playyth, 21/3, playeth.
 Plownged, 3/18, 51/29, plunged.
 Plowngen, 64/18, plunge.
 Plowngy, 5/8, 50/28, wet, rainy.
 Poliphemus, 114/24, Polyphemus.
 Polut, 12/18, polluted.
 Pool, 103/9, the North Pole.
 Porcionables, 68/22, proportionably.
 Porysmes, 71/34, axioms.
 Pose, 107/25, 126/1, to put a case.
 Postum, 56/25, imposthume.
 Powere, 53/2, power.
 Pownage, 36/7, pasturage.
 Powste, 102/15, power.
 Poyntel, 2/3, 129/25, style.
 Predestynat, 119/5, predestined.
 Prescience, 135/19: L. *praescientiam* or *praevidentiam*, some MSS.; tho' most read *praesentiam*.
 Presensse, 134/35, presence.
 Presentarye, 134/26, present.
 Presyous, Presios, 25/15, 56/13, precious.
 Preterit, 133/24, preterite, past; *pl.* 'preterites,' 135/16.
 Pretorie, 9/14, the imperial body-guard.
 Prevey, 94/32, secret.
 Preyeden, 83/12, prayed to.
 Preyedest, 16/11, didst pray.
 Preyere, 84/12, prayer.
 Preyses, 21/9, precious.
 Preysynge, 60/26, praising.
 Prikke, 44/13, point.
 Pris, 25/24, price.
 Prisen, 10/29, estimate, judge.
 Probasyons, 20/24, tunes: Addit. MS. 10,340 'prolasyons'; '*Prolation*: f. a pronouncing, vtterance, deliuerie of words.'—*Cotgrave*. The Latin is '*nunc leuiiores nunc grauiiores modos succinat.*'
 Procede 2/13 [?'percede, pierced'].
 Processes, 70/18.
 Proeve, 120/3, approve.
 Proeved, 69/23, proved.
 Proeven, 70/24, to prove.
 Pronostik, 39/22, prognostic.
 Proposicions (Euclid's), 71/33.
 Prospere, 8/25, proper.
 Provostrye, 58/4, provostship.
 Prykke, 78/29, point.
 Prykketh, 66/20, pricketh.
 Prys, 44/11, 99/29, praise.
 Prys, 123/14, price, value; "worthi of prys," 15/29, precious.
 Prysoun, 102/17, prison.
 Pryve, 26/4, 54/11, private, privy, secret.
 Publyssed, Pupplisen, 45/17, 77/4, to publish, spread, propagate.
 Punysse, 14/19, to punish.
 Purposede, 137/22, proposed.
 Purple, Purpure, 16/26, 92/13, purple.
 Purpres, 58/20, purple clothes.
 Purpyr, 35/11, the Tyrian purple dye.

- Purveyable, 53/21, provident, foreseeing.
 Purveyed, Purvyed, 13/7, 120/12, ordained, foreseen.
 Purvyance, Purvyance, 78/5, 104/17, 105/2, 135/23, providence.
 Putte, 85/2, pit.
 Pymment, 35/7, a kind of drink.
 Quereles, 55/22, complaints.
 Quyk, Qwyke, 104/15, 130/13, living.
 Quyene, 39/11, queen.
 Quyerne, 36/6, a mill.
 Qwit, 127/7, quit.
 Raffe, 114/32, bereft.
 Rather, 20/1, earlier, former.
 Ravaynour, Ravynere, 7/2, 94/29, plunderer.
 Ravenne, 10/2, the city of Ravenna.
 Ravesynge, 14/32, ravishing, carrying off.
 Ravyne, Raveyne, 9/1, 24/17, plunder, rapine.
 Ravysse, 6/6, to snatch.
 Ravyssed, 6/29, misled.
 Ravysshen, 102/22, to carry off.
 Real, 10/16, royal.
 Realte, 39/28, royalty.
 Reaunes, 59/2, realms.
 Rechcheth, 64/17, careth, recketh.
 Recisted, 8/24, resisted.
 Recke, 26/18, to care, reck.
 Recompensacyon, 101/11, recompense.
 Recordede, 2/1, recounted.
 Recordedyst, 72/23, didst recall.
 Recordeth, 79/32, recalls.
 Recourses, 4/2, courses.
 Reddowre, 38/13, severity, rigour.
 Rede, 3/33, red (colour).
 Rede see, 56/13, the Red Sea.
 Rednesse, 3/17, flushing.
 Redowtable, 102/12, venerable.
 Redowte, 5/28, to fear.
 Redowted, 45/5, 57/27, feared, venerated.
 Reducen, 63/32, reduce.
 Redyly, 54/7, readily, easily.
 Refect, 111/8, refreshed.
 Referred, 78/23, reduced.
 Refowsestow, 14/16, refusest thou.
 Reft away, 14/11, carried off.
 Refut, 74/9, refuge.
 Regnes, 53/12, 58/29, kingdoms.
 Regulus, 42/1.
 Rekenynge, 26/5, reckoning.
 Rekkep, 22/10, recketh.
 Remenbresthow, 18/7, rememberest thou.
 Remordith, 109/5, vexeth, troubleth.
 Remuable, 131/11, able to remove from one place to another.
 Remwed, 7/17, 12/10, removed.
 Remwen, 41/21, to remove.
 Rendynge, 1/3, tearing, torn, renting. L. *lacerare camenae*.
 Renne, 76/3, run.
 Rennynge, 35/12, running.
 Renomed, 53/7, 56/30, renowned.
 Renon, 6/21, renown.
 Renovelen, 77/4, renew.
 Repeyrede, 5/4, repaired, came again.
 Repeyreth, 53/28, cometh back.
 Replenysshed, 12/34, replenished.
 Replycation, 82/28, replication.
 Reproeveth, 130/8, reproveth.
 Repugnyn, 119/21, to be repugnant to.
 Reputasyn, 29/12, reputation.
 Requerable, 41/8, desirable.
 Requered, 73/13, required.
 Requereth, 77/34, requires.
 Rescowe, 103/20, to recover.
 Rescowede, 23/26, rescued.
 Resolved, 103/24, melted.
 Resownynge, 84/7, resounding.
 Restingwhyles, 8/17, resting-places.
 Restraine, 14/32, restrain.
 Rethorice, 20/22, Rhetoric.
 Rethoryen, 20/21, rhetorical.
 Retretith, 124/31, considereth.
 Reven, 39/18, 50, rob.
 Reverenc, 58/24, reverend.
 Rewlyche, 23/24, pitiable, sorrowful.
 Reygnen, 19/19, reign.
 Reyjoyseth, 15/15, rejoiceth.
 Reyn, 23/12, 111/30, rain.
 Reynes, 60/12, reins.
 Reynoun, 53/5, renown.
 Rihtwessenesse, 123/14, righteousness.
 Rith, 86/3, right.
 Roche, 19/13, 76/25, rock.
 Rody, 26/26, red, ruddy, blooming.

- Rome, 40/29; certain citizens of, 9/16, 21, 23; the burning of, 43/8.
- Rooes, 64/9, roes.
- Roren, 53/28, roar.
- Rosene, 4/9, 26/21, roseate, ruddy.
- Rosyn, 26/26, rose-coloured.
- Rowte, 33/1, company.
- Royleth, 19/11, runneth, rolleth.
- Ryal, 59/25, royal.
- Rychesses, 6/32, riches, goods, possessions.
- Ryhtwisnesse, Ryhtwysnesse, 9/25, 40/4, righteousness, equity.
- Sachels, 6/33, satchels, sacks.
- Sad, 7/4, 70/4, stable.
- Sadnesse, 86/15, stability.
- Sapyence, 27/23, wisdom.
- Sarpuleria, 6/33, sacks made of coarse cloth.
- Saturnis, 86/32, Saturn.
- Savacion, 8/23, 76/14, safety, salvation.
- Sawse, 36/16, sauce.
- Say, Saye, 2/30, 25/26, 57/4, saw.
- Sayles, 95/10, ships.
- Schapyng, 99/26, escaping.
- Schatereth, 66/22, scattereth.
- Schorne, 7/2, scorn.
- Scome, 115/16, foam, froth.
- Scorklith, 43/23, scorcheth, burneth.
- Scornesthow, 82/23, scornest thou.
- Scripture, 10/32, writing.
- Secre, 8/17, secret.
- Sedes, 14/12, seeds (of corn).
- Sege, 12/20, seat.
- Sekyn, 17/19, search.
- Selde, 103/27, seldom.
- Selve, 2/13, very.
- Semblaable, 33/31, 61/21, 66/28, 77/8, like, the same.
- Semblaunce, 110/33, likeness.
- Semblaunt, 2/4, appearance, countenance.
- Semble, 25/27, assembly.
- Sen, 43/16, see.
- Senek, 59/27, Seneca; Seneciens, 6/20.
- Senglely, 67/5, singly.
- Sensibillitees, 129/18, sensations.
- Sentense, 13/14, sentences.
- Sentuarye, 10/1, sanctuary.
- Septemtyryones, 43/20, the seven stars near the North Pole, the Wain, or Great and Little Bear.
- Serjaunt, 59/20, servants, armed men.
- Servage, 118/28, servitude.
- Seryens, 35/8, Syria.
- Sestow, Sesthow, Seysthow, 38/27, 45/6, 56/27, 112/16, seest thou.
- Sete, 7/29, seat.
- Seyen, Seyh, Seyht, Seyng, 11/26, 12/14, 27/13, 116/14, say.
- Seyn, Seyt, 2/23, 69/12, 134/12, seen.
- Shad, 1/11, 106/18, divided, spread.
- Shad, 62/22, shed, got rid of.
- Shadwe, 26/12, shadow.
- Shadwey, 57/24, shadowy.
- Shaltow, 7/14, 67/9, shalt thou.
- Shapith, 13/21, exerteth.
- Shellen, 10/31, shall.
- Sholden, 4/22, should.
- Sholdesthow, Sholdysthow, 33/9, 39/28, shouldest thou.
- Shollen, 50/32, shall.
- Shrewede, 11/11, wicked.
- Shrewednesse, 11/13, 91/15, wickedness.
- Shrewes, 6/28, 42/8, wicked persons, wretches.
- Shronk, 2/10, shrunk.
- Shuldres, 115/16, shoulders.
- Shullen (*pl.*), 16/15, shall.
- Shyllefyssh, 35/10, shellfish.
- Sikerly, 74/3, certainly.
- Sikernessee, 4/22, 9/34, security, safety.
- Sittinge, 5/26, fitting, becoming.
- Skars, 37/6, scarce.
- Skatere, 69/7, scatter.
- Skyles, 120/32, skills.
- Skylyng, 106/25, reason.
- Slaked, 49/6, 118/3, slackened.
- Slaken, 53/29, slacken.
- Slakke, 53/19, slackening (of stringed instruments).
- Slakyn, 35/4, to slake (hunger).
- Slawhtre, 11/28, slaughter.
- Sledys, 86/23, sledges.
- Slen, 41/34, 43/11, slay.
- Slepin, 35/11, slept.
- Slepys, 35/11, sleeps.
- Slow, Slowh, Slowgh, 43/9, 104/13, 115/6, slew.

- Slowen, 59/29, slay.
 Slydith, 110/24, slideth.
 Slydyng, 14/18, changing.
 Snale, 46/8, small, of no avail.
 Smaragdes, 74, note 3, emeralds.
 Smerteth, 27/9, smarteth, paineth.
 Smokede, 2/19, besmoked.
 Smot, 114/27, smote.
 Smothe, 4/5, smooth, quiet.
 Smylyng, 104/6, smiling.
 Snakis, 132/31, snakes.
 Socrates, 6/1, 10/27, 38/17.
 Sodeyn, 20/15, 97/6, sudden.
 Solutarye, 59/33, solitary.
 Somdel, 16/16, 134/33, somewhat.
 Somer, 14/8, 63/21, summer.
 Somme, 29/6, 63/32, suin, measure, total.
 Son, 53/19, sound.
 Sondes, 76/25, sands.
 Songyn, 85/6, sung.
 Sonnere, 97/2, sooner.
 Sonwh, 103/23, snow.
 Soonges, 84/6, songs.
 Sopose, 108/22, suppose.
 Sorans, 6/20, sorrows.
 Sormounteht, 64/19, surpasseth.
 Sornounten, 63/12, exceed.
 Soruful, 15/4, sorrowful.
 Sorwe, Soruwe, 62/4, *et passim*, sorrow.
 Sorwistow, 18/17, sorrowest thou.
 Sorye, 26/11, sorry, grievous.
 Soth, Sothfast, 11/31, 48/7, 71/30, true.
 Soth, Sothe, 10/28, 79/1, truth.
 Sothere, 67/6, truer.
 Sothfastly, 70/6, truly.
 Sothfastnesse, 78/28, truthfulness.
 Sothnesse, 17/14, truthfulness.
 Sovereynly, 71/27, supremely.
 Soveryn, 28/3, supreme.
 Sowest, 69/1, followest.
 Sowhte, 36/30, sought.
 Sowne, 25/4, to sound.
 Sownyng, 4/5, sounding, roaring.
 Sowre, 9/11, sore, grievous.
 Sparkle, 82/17, spark.
 Spece, 128/10, species.
 Speculation, 118/25, looking, contemplation.
 Speden, 125/17, to make clear, explain.
 Spedful, 97/21, 125/20, efficacious, conducive.
 Spedyn, 118/23, to expedite.
 Speeres, 4/2, spheres.
 Spillestow, 7/22, spillst thou.
 Splaces, 80/26, spaces.
 Sprad, 4/9, 25/33, spread.
 Spraynged, 29/17, sprinkled, mixed.
 Stable, 4/6, firm, fixed.
 Stablely, 105/25, firmly.
 Stableness, Stabylnesse, 18/5, 20/29, stability.
 Stablete, 107/7, stability.
 Stablyssyth, 104/32, to establish.
 Stadie, 93/1, a land measure.
 Stanchd, 23/15, satisfied.
 Stant, 5/8, 88/5, stands.
 Stenteth, 31/21, stinteth.
 Steppis, 133/1, steps.
 Sterre, 4/1, 24/12, 26/21, star.
 Sterry, 24/12, starry.
 Sterten, 81/17, to start.
 Stidefast, Stydefast, 1/22, 23/16, 38/17, 70/5, steadfast.
 Stidefastnesse, 76/34, stability, strength.
 Stiere, 81/12, rudder.
 Stierne, 47/15, stern.
 Stille, 47/19, quiet.
 Stintynge, 47/24, stopping, ceasing.
 Stokkes, 117/31, stocks of trees: L. trunci.
 Stoon, 31/2, stone.
 Stowndes, 16/33, 22/4, 111/25, 138/16, times.
 Stoycyens, 6/5, 129/17, the Stoics.
 Strawght, 132/29, stretched, extended.
 Strein, 19/11, stream.
 Strengere, 6/31, 20/20, 63/13, stronger.
 Strenges, 53/19, 84/7, strings (stringed instruments).
 Strepyn, 92/12, strip off.
 Streylhte, 49/16, stretched.
 Streyne, 136/21, constrain.
 Streyte, 47/6, 51/2, narrow.
 Strokk, 119/14, stroke.
 Strompetes, 2/33, strumpets.
 Strondes, 35/15, 64/14, strands.
 Strook, 138/22, stroke.
 Stryf, 9/13, 22/20, strive.
 Stryne, 16/29, strain, press.

Studieden, 8/9, studied.
 Styde, 116/10, stead.
 Styre, 69/4, 111/9, to ascend.
 Style, 35/17, quiet.
 Stynte, 19/20, stopped.
 Stynten, 25/4, to stop.
 Styntyth, 94/17, stoppeth, ceaseth.
 Styred, 83/20, moved.
 Suacyon, 20/21, persuasion.
 Subgitz, 63/5, subjects, inferiors.
 Subgyt, Subgyd, 33/26, 53/8, subject.
 Submitted, 12/5, compelled, forced.
 Suffisaunce, Suffysaunce, 38/15, 55/29, sufficiency.
 Suffisaunt, Suffysaunte, 55/12, 15, sufficient.
 Suffisauntly, 104/9, sufficiently.
 Suffiseth, 56/6, suffices.
 Suffreden, 9/2, suffered.
 Suffres, 14/17, sufferest.
 Sum, 28/24, some.
 Summytted, 69/21, 106/20, submitted.
 Sun, the, 4/1.
 Superfyte, 63/21, surface.
 Supplien, 63/2, supplicate.
 Surte, 36/17, security.
 Sustigne, 39/9, sustain.
 Swerdes, 59/29, swords.
 Swete, 1/14, sweet.
 Swetenesse, 20/21, sweetly.
 Swety, 36/28, sweaty.
 Sweyh, 13/30, whirl (circular motion).
 Swey, 22/1, whirlings.
 Swich, Swiche, Swych, Swhiche, 2/6, 27, 33, 3/9, 73/4, such.
 Swife, 86/24, swift.
 Swolwe, 77/24, swallow.
 Swote, 111/28, sweet.
 Swyfly, 27/8, 63/19, swiftly.
 Syk, Syke, 17/18, 101/2, sick.
 Sykenesse, 62/3, disease.
 Symacus, 27/22, Boethius's wife's father.
 Symplesse, 106/11, simplicity.
 Syn, 17/19, 21/22, since.
 Syngler, 44/34, individual, single.
 Syngler, 25/22, singular.
 Syngulerly, 105/25, singly.
 Sykyr, 6/34, secure, safe.
 Syryus, 14/14, the star Sirius.
 Sysile, 59/11, Sicily.

BOETHIUS.

Tabernacle of this lyf, 26/12.
 Tagus, 74/13, the river.
 Takestow, 17/22, takest thou.
 Talent, 3/3, 20/1, 131/2, affection.
 Tatalus, 84/19, Tantalus.
 Tawhtest, 112/25, taughtest.
 Taylage, 37/24, tollage.
 Tempest, 28/17, troublest.
 Temprede, 84/6, attempted.
 Thanne, 5/10, then.
 Thar, 76/20, need.
 Thechinges, 12/34, teachings.
 Thedyr, 21/28, thither.
 Thei, 14/32, these.
 Theodoric, Theodoryke, 9/3, 57/2, king of the Goths.
 Therwhiles, 137/24, whilst.
 Thewes, 94/7, ways, habits; glost 'conditions.'
 Thikke, 89/28, these.
 Thilke, 1/13, 7/15, 78/20, the same, that.
 Thise, 14/32, these.
 Tho, 3/2, 6/10, 131/2, the.
 Tho, 3/22, 26/1, then.
 Thogth, 105/21, thought.
 Tholome, Ptolemy, 44/18.
 Thonderere, 111/11, thunderer, i. e. God.
 Thonderlyht, 7/11, lightning.
 Thondre, 31/3, thunder.
 Thonk, 60/26, thanks.
 Thornesse, 26/29, thorns, hawthorns in flower.
 Thorw, 6/15, through.
 Thowching, 10/33, touching.
 Thowht, Thowt, 3/26, 27, thought.
 Thrace, 5/11, the country of.
 Thral, 60/15, enthralled.
 Thresshold, 3/18, threshold.
 Thresten, 32/30, thrust.
 Thriste, Thryst, 99/32, 115/17, thrust.
 Throf, 58/21, throve, flourished.
 Thurst, 24/21, 55/32, 84/19, thirst.
 Thykke, 22/24, these.
 Thynne, 47/16, slender.
 Ticius, 84/21, Tityus.
 Tigris, 117/23, the river.
 To, 64/9, the.
 To-breke, 69/7, break in pieces.
 Todrowen, 6/8, drew asunder.
 To-forn, 130/27, before.
 Togidre, 42/9, together.

M

- To hepe, 109/4, together.
 Tokneth, 16/32, tokeneth.
 Tollen, 44/7, to draw.
 To-morwe, 133/27, to-morrow.
 Tonge, 44/29, speech.
 Tonnes, 23/34, vessels.
 Torenten, 6/9, 123/28, rent asunder.
 Tormentus, 6/19, torments.
 Tornest, 13/29, turns.
 To-torn, 53/30, torn in pieces.
 Tow, 14/28, thou.
 Towched, 23/34, for Cowched,
 laid, set. *L. jacere*.
 Towchede, Towchid, 2/11, 108/31,
 touched.
 Towmblynge, 27/1, 30/4, 67/22,
 changing, changeable, tumbling.
 Traas, 132/30, trace, track.
 Trace, 83/28, Thracia.
 Tragedyen, 60/19, tragedian.
 Transpor, 11/28, transport, throw
 on.
 Travayle, Travaylen, 5/23, 20/11,
 40/8, labour, toil.
 Travayleden, 120/15, laboured.
 Travayleth, Travaylith, 76/14,
 124/14, labourer.
 Trecheryes, 9/32, treacheries.
 Treden, 14/21, tread.
 Trenden, 79/3, roll, turn.
 Trespace, 28/32, wrong-doing.
 Trowblable, 92/18, troublesome.
 Trowble, 19/6, turbid, stormy.
 Trowbly, 103/28, troubled, cloudy.
 Trowe, Trowen, 2/8, 10/26, 17/10,
 27/2, trow, know.
 Trowesthow, Trowestow, 5/29,
 26/12, 29/7, 67/22, trowest thou.
 Troy, 114/14, the destruction of.
 Trwblynges, 92/19, troubles.
 Trybulasyons, 16/12, tribulations.
 Trygwille, 8/27, Triggvilla, regiae
 praepositus domus.
 Tumolte, 6/34, tumult.
 Turmenten, 9/12, torment.
 Twiterith, 54/6, twitter.
 Twyncled, 26/5, winked.
 Tydeth, 34/8, betides.
 Tygre, 63/14, tiger.
 Tyle, 60/15, Thule.
 Tylyere, 117/8, tiller.
 Tylyinge, 117/4, tilling.
 Tyneo, Plato's, 68/4.
 Tyren, 84/22, to tear.
 Tyrene, 64/10, Tyrrhene.
 Tyresye, 122/8, Tiresias.
 Tyrye, 35/8, 58/21, Tyre.
 Tyryones, vii, 43/20, Septemtriones,
 the seven stars near the North
 Pole, called also the Wain and
 the Great and Little Bear.
 Ulixes, 94/10, 114/23, Ulysses.
 Umble, 22/9, humble.
 Umblesse, 37/25, humility.
 Unagreable, 1/20, unpleasant, dis-
 agreeable.
 Unassaied, 28/34, untried.
 Unbityde, Unbytyde, 125/26,
 136/19, not to happen.
 Unbowed, 115/18, unbent.
 Uncovenable, 109/28, unmeet, im-
 portunate.
 Undefowled, 27/19, undefiled.
 Undepartable, 93/21, inseparable.
 Undescounfited, 7/7, not dis-
 comfited.
 Undigne, 42/28, unworthy.
 Undowntous, 116/12, indubitable.
 Undyrneth, 59/9, underneath.
 Undyrputte, 18/27, put under, sub-
 ject.
 Undyrstondyn, 19/25, 29/32, to
 understand.
 Uneschuable, Uneschwably, 117/19,
 121/31, unavoidable, unavoidably.
 Ungentel, 28/25, ignoble.
 Ungrobbed, 36/14, ungrubbed.
 Unhoped, 108/20, unexpected.
 Universels, 128/19, universal.
 Universite, 128/12, whole.
 Unjoyful, 32/31, bring no pleasure.
 Unjoynen, 117/27, to separate.
 Unknowable, 47/19, unknown.
 Unknowe, 103/3, unknown.
 Unknowynge, 108/12, ignorant.
 Unknyttten, 120/6, unloose.
 Unkorven, 36/14, uncut.
 Unkowth, 20/26, unknown, foreign.
 Unkunnyng, 3/7, 6/15, 124/21,
 unknowing, ignorant.
 Unlaced, 82/26, disentangled.
 Unlefevel, Unlefful, 20/31, 120/3,
 illicit, unlawful.
 Unlyk, 107/30, unlikely.
 Unmeke, 115/4, fierce, cruel.
 Unmoevable, 134/26, immovable.
 Unmoevablete, 106/17, immobility.

- Unmyhty, 7/15, weak, impotent.
 Unnethe, 17/23, scarcely.
 Unparfyt, 65/6, imperfect.
 Unparygal, 49/21, unequal.
 Unpietous, 1/19, cruel.
 Unpleytē, 48/3, explain.
 Unpleyteth, 129/28, explaineth, unfoldeth.
 Unplitable, 9/12 (*inexplicabilis*).
 Unprofitable man, 3/8, a common man, without education.
 Unpunysed, 8/31, unpunished.
 Unpurveyed, 20/7, unforeseen.
 Unraced, 86/8, unbroken, whole.
 Unryhtful, 6/1, unjust.
 Unryhtfully, 14/21, unrightfully, unjustly.
 Unscience, 121/20, unreal knowledge, no knowledge.
 Unsely, 96/23, wretched.
 Unselynesse, 96/30, wretchedness.
 Unskylfully, 11/18, unwisely, improperly.
 Unsolempne, 6/21, not famous, not celebrated.
 Unsowe, 36/10, unsown.
 Unspedful, 139/5, unsuccessful.
 Unstaunchable, 46/3, unlimited, infinite.
 Unstaunched, 42/24, uncurbed, unrestrained.
 Unsufferable, 62/4, intolerable.
 Untretable, 47/27, inexorable, implacable.
 Unusage, 44/33, unfrequency.
 Unwar, 23/30, 117/7, unexpected.
 Unwarly, 1/9, unaware, unexpectedly.
 Unwemmed, Unwemmyd, 27/19, 138/31, inviolate.
 Unwenyd, 108/20, unexpected.
 Unworshipful, 58/24, dishonoured.
 Unwot, 136/15, knows not.
 Unzely, 27/10, wretched.
 Uphepyngē, 25/22, heaping up.
 Uppereste, 2/25, highest.
 Up so down, 121/8, upside down.
 Upsprong, 36/10, upsprung.
 Ursa, 111/17, the Polar star.
 Usage, 3/5, use, subjection, bondage. L. assuefaciant.
 Usaunce, 58/12, usage.
 Used, 11/2, 14/4, usual, accustomed.
 Uttereste, 3/23, 77/1, extremest, outermost.
 Vanesshen, 58/2, vanishing.
 Varyauntus, 14/9, varying.
 Vel, 44/22, well.
 Vengerisses, 84/15, she-avengers.
 Venyaunce, 97/31, vengeance.
 Venym, 115/7, venom.
 Venym, 35/8, the celebrated Tyrian dye is here meant.
 Verone, 11/27, Verona.
 Verray, 1/5, 18/34, true.
 Verraylyche, 73/21, verily.
 Vesevus, 7/10, the mountain Vesuvius.
 Visyous, 42/25, vicious.
 Voidede, 10/2, departed.
 Voltor, 84/20, vulture.
 Voyde, 34/29, 44/11, having an empty purse.
 Voyded of, 37/20, emptied of, free from.
 Vyl, 66/16, 86/5, vile.
 Vysyos, 58/27, vicious.
 Vytayles, 58/7, victuals, food.
 Waar, 30/26, wary.
 Wakyngē, 115/2, watchful.
 Walvyngē, 19/7, tossing.
 Walweth, 40/23, tosseth.
 Wan, 114/16, did win.
 Wan, 16/25, when.
 War, 97/7, 113/15, be aware, take care.
 Ware, 36/22, merchandize.
 Warnestored, 7/1, securely housed.
 Waves, 4/8, 9/8, waves.
 Waxen, 14/13, swollen, increased in size.
 Wayk, 19/1, weak.
 Wayn, 87/11, cart.
 Weche, 14/25, which.
 Weened, 112/29, believed.
 Weenyngē, 134/19, opinion.
 Weep (*pret.*), 23/28, wept.
 Weerey, 111/6, weary.
 Welde, 36/17, *qq.* wild, or boiled.
 Weleful, 1/8, 18/20, prosperous, joyful.
 Welefulnessse, 6/4, prosperity, felicity.
 Welkne, 39/30, welkin.
 Welle, 84/8, 112/3, well, source.

- Wellen, 114/1, to wither, fade.
 Welneeth, 26/31, tosseth, rolleth.
 Welneyh, 52/35, well-nigh.
 Wende, 41/24, weened, thought.
 Wendeth, 46/32, goeth.
 Wene, 3/9, think to. L. putarem.
 Wene, 104/25 [for Weue, L. *con-
tezo*, weave, make, speak].
 Wenen, 56/9, think.
 Wenestow, Weenesthow, 17/8, 18/
21, knowest thou.
 Wenith, 47/14, thinketh.
 Wenyng, 6/11, thinking.
 Wepistow, 7/21, weepeth thou.
 Weply, Weply, 2/2, 83/30, tearful.
 Were as, 19/19, whereas.
 Werned, 25/21, refused, denied.
 Werrye, 36/25, to make war.
 Westrene, 111/17, western.
 Wete, 1/5, 5/8, wet.
 Weten, Wetyng, Witen, Wyten, 69/
16, 102/23, 121/23, 124/15, to
know, learn.
 Weve, 104/25, weave, make, tell.
 Wex, 129/26, wax.
 Wexen, 16/18, to increase, wax,
grow.
 Wexeth, Wexit, 3/30, 7/27, 18/33,
waxeth, increaseth.
 Weyes, 44/32, roads.
 Weyhte, Weyhty, 25/23, 63/13,
weight.
 Weyther, 120/16, whether.
 Weyues, 103/11, waves.
 Weyve, 19/15, waive, forsake.
 Wham, 70/5, whom.
 Whas, 10/11, was.
 Whel, 13/28, wheel.
 Whennes, 4/5, 11/18, whence.
 Whilom, 3/31, aforetime.
 Whise, 8/11, 10/30, wise.
 Whyder, Whyderward, 50/10, 138/8,
whither.
 Whyten, 72/16, to learn.
 Wierdes, 1/9, 7/6, fates, destinies.
 Wiht, 21/11, wight, a man.
 Wikke, 39/15, 88/30, wicked, bad.
 Wilne, 10/19, to desire.
 Wilynnges, 77/27, desires.
 Wist, Wyst, 11/9, known.
 Wit, 128/4, sense.
 Withdrowh, 51/1, withdrew.
 Withholden, 21/34, withstand.
 With-inne forth, 130/30, inwardly.
 Withowteforth, 128/6, outwardly.
 Withseid, Withseyde, 70/23, 116/
23, denied.
 Withstonde, Withston, 71/19, 139/5,
withstand.
 Withstonde, 8/24, withstood.
 Witynge, 121/28, knowledge.
 Wod, 36/17, woad.
 Wode, 26/26, wood.
 Wold, 10/18, willed.
 Wolen (*pl.*), 74/12, will.
 Woltow, 17/4, 76/29, wilt thou.
 Wondyr, 27/8, wondrously.
 Wonen, 47/14, dwell.
 Woode, Wood, 6/34, 7/27, 16/10,
41/28, furious, mad, angry, raging.
 Wooden, 96/8, to rage.
 Woodeth, 96/15, rageth.
 Woodness, 31/5, 43/25, 84/19, rage,
madness.
 Woost, Wost, 11/31, 17/30, 136/31,
knowest.
 Woot, Wot, 17/31, 62/7, know.
 Wopen, 16/7, weeped.
 Wordly, Wordely, 3/31, 63/32,
worldly.
 Wordyl, 80/10, world.
 Workyn, 139/9, to work.
 Worth up, 23/20, ascend.
 Woxen, 16/16, 84/16, grown, waxed.
 Wrastlen, 90/24, wrestle.
 Wrekere, 114/12, avenger.
 Wrekynge, 114/14, vengeance.
 Writith, 7/10, worketh.
 Wrothly, 3/16, grieved, sad.
 Wryteres, 45/20, authors.
 Wrythen, 119/31, twist, turn, wrest.
 Wyckyd, 50/26, unpalatable.
 Wyht, 11/33, wight, person.
 Wyhte, 30/33, weight.
 Wyle, 104/25, while.
 Wyllynge, 118/19, 138/33, desire.
 Wymmen, 27/27, women.
 Wymplith, 20/33, veileth.
 Wyngis, 132/32, wings.
 Wypen, 4/32, wipe.
 Wyrkyng, 75/10, 76/18, working,
operation.
 Wystemstow, 18/11, wistest thou.
 Wytnessefully, 102/14, attestedly,
publicly.
 Yaf, 4/21, 58/24, gave.
 Yald, 114/26, yielded.

Yave, 25/34, 36/4, gave.
 Yben, 135/4, been.
 Ybownde, 74/6, bound.
 Ychargyd, 56/12, loaded.
 Ycelepyd, 1/14, 105/1, called.
 Ydel, 'in ydel,' 2/14, 32/1, 88/5, 122/23, in vain.
 Ydel, 47/16, empty.
 Ydon, 86/21, done.
 Ydrad, 22/8, feared.
 Ydre, 104/12, Hydra.
 Ydymmyd, 26/21, dimmed, becoming less conspicuous: said of the morning star waning through the rays of the rising sun.
 Yerde, 54/6, branch, sapling.
 Yeten, 19/5, get.
 Yeven, 63/2, 109/14, to give, bestow.
 Yevith, 115/24, giveth.
 Yevynge, 31/22, giving.
 Yfalle, 118/28, fallen.
 Yfastned, 13/29, fastened.
 Yfechched, 106/7, fixed.
 Yfownde, 124/22, founded.
 Ygerdonyd, 122/29, rewarded.
 Ygeten, 51/22, gotten.
 Yif, 4/21, if.
 Yiftes, 13/25, gifts.
 Yilden, 84/13, to give; 116/1, to yield.
 Yildeth, 111/28, yieldeth.
 Yisterday, 133/28, yesterday.
 Ykawht, 92/20, caught, captured.
 Yknowe, 124/15, known.
 Yknyt, 104/25, knit.
 Yled, 123/3, led.
 Yleft, 8/12, left.
 Ylett, 125/23, hindered.
 Yloost, 20/10, lost.

Ylorn, 114/24, lost.
 Ymaginable, 129/1, possessing imagination.
 Ymaked, 86/32, made.
 Ymedled, 109/4, mixed.
 Ynde, 60/13, India.
 Ynow, Ynowh, 55/34, 56/7, enough.
 Yok, 47/9, 81/27.
 Yolden, 16/10, yielded, given.
 Yowthe, 5/20, youth.
 Yplaunted, 51/16, placed.
 Yporveyid, 120/13, foreseen.
 Ypreysyd, 123/17, valued.
 Yren, 10/4, iron.
 Ys, 72/24, yes.
 Yset, 104/31, set.
 Yseyn, 135/27, seen.
 Ysmyte, 62/24, smitten.
 Ysped, 115/27, despatched.
 Yspendyd, 125/17, examined.
 Ysprad, 47/10, spread.
 Yssues, 62/8, issues, ends.
 Ysustenyd, 126/18, is sustained.
 Ytakus, 114/23, Ithaca.
 Ytravayled, 120/14, laboured.
 Yveles, 85/19, evils.
 Ywoven, 2/20, 105/33, woven.
 Ywrought, 2/24, wrought.
 Yxion, 84/18, Ixion.
 Yyeven, 110/3, given.

Zeno, 6/19.
 Zepherus, Zephirus, 14/9, 26/27, the westerly wind.

3eelde, 3elde, 26/32, 41/3, seldom.
 3elde, 26/15, yielded.
 3elyly, 28/29, happily, blissfully
 3er, 111/28, year.
 3yt, 17/24, yet.



